1889

Australia Twice Traversed

Ernest Giles


SED
Digitized by Google

45/-
2 vols

CTV

BF
Giles

451

Yours faithfully
Ernest Giles

Yours faithfully
Ernest Giles

AUSTRALIA

[illegible] ICE TRAVERSED.

Yours faithfully
Ernest Giles

AUSTRALIA TWICE TRAVERSED:

The Romance of Exploration,

BEING

A NARRATIVE COMPILED FROM THE JOURNALS

OF

FIVE EXPLORING EXPEDITIONS

INTO AND THROUGH

Central South Australia, and Western Australia,

FROM 1872 TO 1876.

BY

ERNEST GILES,

Fellow, and Gold Medallist, of the Royal Geographical Society of London.

GO FORTH, MY BOOK, AND SHOW THE THINGS,
PILGRIMAGE UNTO THE PILGRIM BRINGS.
Bunyan.

IN TWO VOLUMES.—VOL. I.

WITH MAPS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

LONDON:
SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON, SEARLE & RIVINGTON,
LIMITED,
St. Dunstan's House,
FETTER LANE, FLEET STREET, E.C.
1889.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED,
STAMFORD STREET AND CHARING CROSS.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I.

BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

FROM 4TH TO 30TH AUGUST, 1872.

CHAPTER II.

FROM 30TH AUGUST TO 6TH SEPTEMBER, 1872.

CHAPTER III.

FROM 6TH TO 17TH SEPTEMBER, 1872.

CHAPTER IV.

FROM 17TH SEPTEMBER TO 1ST OCTOBER, 1872.

CHAPTER V.

FROM 1ST TO 15TH OCTOBER, 1872.

CHAPTER VI.

FROM 15TH OCTOBER, 1872, TO 31ST JANUARY, 1873.

BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.

FROM 4TH TO 22ND AUGUST, 1873.

CHAPTER II.

FROM 22ND AUGUST TO 10TH SEPTEMBER, 1873.

CHAPTER III.

FROM 10TH TO 30TH SEPTEMBER, 1873.

CHAPTER IV.

FROM 30TH SEPTEMBER TO 9TH NOVEMBER, 1873.

CHAPTER V.

FROM 9TH NOVEMBER TO 23RD DECEMBER, 1873.

CHAPTER VI.

FROM 23RD DECEMBER, 1873, TO 16TH JANUARY, 1874.

CHAPTER VII.

FROM 16TH JANUARY TO 19TH FEBRUARY, 1874.

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM 20TH FEBRUARY TO 12TH MARCH, 1874.

ILLUSTRATIONS TO VOL. I.

Maps.

AUTHOR'S NOTES.

THE original journals of the field notes, from which the present narrative is compiled, were published, as each expedition ended, as parliamentary papers by the Government of the Colony of South Australia.

The journals of the first two expeditions, formed a small book, which was distributed mostly to the patrons who had subscribed to the fund for my second expedition. The account of the third, found its way into the South Australian *Observer*, while the records of the fourth and fifth journeys remained as parliamentary documents, the whole never having appeared together. Thus only fragments of the accounts of my wanderings became known; and though my name as an explorer has been heard of, both in Australia and England, yet very few people even in the Colonies are aware of what I have really done. Therefore it was thought that a work embodying the whole of my explorations might be acceptable to both English and Colonial readers.

Some years have been allowed to elapse since these journeys were commenced; but the facts are the same, and to those not mixed up in the adventures, the incidents as fresh as when they occurred.

Unavoidably, I have had to encounter a large area of desert country in the interior of the colonies of South Australia, and Western Australia, in my various wanderings; but I also discovered considerable tracts of lands watered and suitable for occupation.

It is not in accordance with my own feelings in regard to Australia that I am the chronicler of her poorer regions; and although an Englishman, Australia has no sincerer well-wisher; had it been otherwise, I could not have performed the work these volumes record. It has indeed been often a cause of regret that my lines of march should have led me away from the beautiful and fertile places upon Australia's shores, where our countrymen have made their homes.

On the subject of the wonderful resources of Australia I am not called upon to enlarge, and surely all who have heard her name must have heard also of her gold, copper, wool, wine, beef, mutton, wheat, timber, and other products; and if any other evidence were wanting to show what Australia really is, a visit to her cities, and an experience of her civilisation, not forgetting the great revenues of her different provinces, would dispel at once all previous inaccurate impressions of those who, never having seen, perhaps cannot believe in the existence of them.

In the course of this work my reader will easily discover to whom it is dedicated, without a more formal statement under such a heading. The preface, which may seem out of its place, is merely such to my own journeys. I thought it due to my readers and my predecessors in the Australian field of discovery, that I should give a rapid epitome (which may contain some minor errors) of what they had done, and which is here put forward by way of introduction.

Most of the illustrations, except one or two photographs, were originally from very rough sketches, or I might rather say scratches, of mine, improved upon by Mr. Val Prinsep, of Perth, Western Australia, who drew most of the plates referring to the camel expeditions, while those relating to the horse journeys were sketched by Mr. Woodhouse, Junr., of Melbourne; the whole, however, have undergone a process of reproduction at the hands of London artists.

To Mrs. Cashel Hoey, the well-known authoress and Australian correspondent, who revised and cleared my original MSS., I have to accord my most sincere thanks. To Mr. Henniker-Heaton, M.P., who appears to be the Imperial Member in the British Parliament for all Australia, I am under great obligations, he having introduced me to Mr. Marston, of the publishing firm who have produced these volumes. I also have to thank Messrs. Clowes and Sons for the masterly way in which they have printed this work. Also Messrs. Creed, Robinson, Fricker, and Symons, of the publishing staff. The maps have been reproduced by Weller, the well-known geographer.

INTRODUCTION.

BEFORE narrating my own labours in opening out portions of the unknown interior of Australia, it will be well that I should give a succinct account of what others engaged in the same arduous enterprise around the shores and on the face of the great Southern Continent, have accomplished.

After the wondrous discoveries of Columbus had set the Old World into a state of excitement, the finding of new lands appears to have become the romance of that day, as the exploration by land of unknown regions has been that of our time; and in less than fifty years after the discovery of America navigators were searching every sea in hopes of emulating the deeds of that great explorer; but nearly a hundred years elapsed before it became known in Europe that a vast and misty land existed in the south, whose northern and western shores had been met in certain latitudes and longitudes, but whose general outline had not been traced, nor was it even then visited with anything like a systematic geographical object. The fact of the existence of such a land at the European antipodes no doubt set many ardent and adventurous spirits upon the search, but of their exploits and labours we know nothing.

The Dutch were the most eager in their attempts, although Torres, a Spaniard, was, so far as we know, the first to pass in a voyage from the West Coast of America to India, between the Indian or Malay Islands, and the great continent to the south; hence we have Torres Straits. The first authentic voyager, however, to our actual shores was Theodoric Hertoge, subsequently known as Dirk Hartog—bound from Holland to India. He arrived at the western coast between the years 1610 and 1616. An island on the west coast bears his name: there he left a tin plate nailed to a tree with the date of his visit and the name of his ship, the Endragt, marked upon it. Not very long after Theodoric Hertoge, and still to the western and north-western coasts, came Zeachern, Edels, Nuitz, De Witt, and Pelsart, who was wrecked upon Houtman's Albrolhos, or rocks named by Edels, in his ship the Leewin or Lion. Cape Leewin is called after this vessel. Pelsart left two convicts on the Australian coast in 1629. Carpenter was the next navigator, and all these adventurers have indelibly affixed their names to portions of the coast of the land they discovered. The next, and a greater than these, at least greater in his navigating successes, was Abel Janz Tasman, in 1642. Tasman was instructed to inquire from the native inhabitants for Pelsart's two convicts, and to bring them away with him, *if they entreated him*; but they were never heard of again. Tasman sailed round a great portion of the Australian coast, discovered what he named Van Dieman's land, now Tasmania, and New Zealand. He it was who called the whole, believing it to be one, New

Holland, after the land of his birth. Next we have Dampier, an English buccaneer—though the name sounds very like Dutch; it was probably by chance only that he and his roving crew visited these shores. Then came Wilhelm Vlaming with three ships. God save the mark to call such things ships. How the men performed the feats they did, wandering over vast and unknown oceans, visiting unknown coasts with iron-bound shores, beset with sunken reefs, subsisting on food not fit for human beings, suffering from scurvy caused by salted diet and rotten biscuit, with a short allowance of water, in torrid zones, and liable to be attacked and killed by hostile natives, it is difficult for us to conceive. They suffered all the hardships it is possible to imagine upon the sea, and for what? for fame, for glory? That their names and achievements might be handed down to us; and this seems to have been their only reward; for there was no Geographical Society's medal in those days with its motto to spur them on.

Vlaming was the discoverer of the Swan River, upon which the seaport town of Freemantle and the picturesque city of Perth, in Western Australia, now stand. This river he discovered in 1697, and he was the first who saw Dirk Hartog's tin plate.

Dampier's report of the regions he had visited caused him to be sent out again in 1710 by the British Government, and upon his return, all previous doubts, if any existed, as to the reality of the existence of this continent, were dispelled, and the position of its western shores was well established. Dampier discovered a beautiful flower of the pea family known as the Clianthus Dampierii. In 1845

Captain Sturt found the same flower on his Central Australian expedition, and it is now generally known as Sturt's Desert Pea, but it is properly named in its botanical classification, after its original discoverer.

After Dampier's discoveries, something like sixty years elapsed before Cook appeared upon the scene, and it was not until his return to England that practical results seemed likely to accrue to any nation from the far-off land. I shall not recapitulate Cook's voyages; the first fitted out by the British Government was made in 1768, but Cook did not touch upon Australia's coast until two years later, when, voyaging northwards along the eastern coast, he anchored at a spot he called Botany Bay, from the brightness and abundance of the beautiful wild flowers he found growing there. Here two natives attempted to prevent his landing, although the boats were manned with forty men. The natives threw stones and spears at the invaders, but nobody was killed. At this remote and previously unvisited spot one of the crew named Forby Sutherland, who had died on board the Endeavour, was buried, his being the first white man's grave ever dug upon Australia's shore; at least the first authenticated one—for might not the remaining one of the two unfortunate convicts left by Pelsart have dug a grave for his companion who was the first to die, no man remaining to bury the survivor? Cook's route on this voyage was along the eastern coast from Cape Howe in south latitude 37° 30′ to Cape York in Torres Straits in latitude 10° 40′. He called the country New South Wales, from its fancied resemblance to that older land, and he took

possession of the whole in the name of George III. as England's territory.

Cook reported so favourably of the regions he had discovered that the British Government decided to establish a colony there; the spot finally selected was at Port Jackson, and the settlement was called Sydney in 1788. After Cook came the Frenchman Du Fresne and his unfortunate countryman, La Pérouse. Then Vancouver, Blyth, and the French General and Admiral, D'Entre-Casteaux, who went in search of the missing La Pérouse. In 1826, Captain Dillon, an English navigator, found the stranded remains of La Pérouse's ships at two of the Charlotte Islands group. We now come to another great English navigator, Matthew Flinders, who was the first to circumnavigate Australia; to him belongs the honour of having given to this great island continent the name it now bears. In 1798, Flinders and Bass, sailing in an open boat from Sydney, discovered that Australia and Van Dieman's Land were separate; the dividing straits between were then named after Bass. In 1802, during his second voyage in the Investigator, a vessel about the size of a modern ship's launch, Flinders had with him as a midshipman John Franklin, afterwards the celebrated Arctic navigator. On his return to England, Flinders, touching at the Isle of France, was made prisoner by the French governor and detained for nearly seven years, during which time a French navigator Nicolas Baudin, with whom came Pérron and Lacepède the naturalists, and whom Flinders had met at a part of the southern coast which he called Encounter Bay in reference to that meeting, claimed

and reaped the honour and reward of a great portion of the unfortunate prisoner's work. Alas for human hopes and aspirations, this gallant sailor died before his merits could be acknowledged or rewarded, and I believe one or two of his sisters were, until very lately, living in the very poorest circumstances.

The name of Flinders is, however, held in greater veneration than any of his predecessors or successors, for no part of the Australian coast was unvisited by him. Rivers, mountain ranges, parks, districts, counties, and electoral divisions, have all been named after him; and, indeed, I may say the same of Cook; but, his work being mostly confined to the eastern coast, the more western colonies are not so intimately connected with his name, although an Australian poet has called him the Columbus of our shore.

After Flinders and Baudin came another Frenchman, De Fréycinet, bound on a tour of discovery all over the world.

Australia's next navigator was Captain, subsequently Admiral, Philip Parker King, who carried out four separate voyages of discovery, mostly upon the northern coasts. At three places upon which King favourably reported, namely Camden Harbour on the north-west coast, Port Essington in Arnhiem's Land, and Port Cockburn in Apsley Straits, between Melville and Bathurst Islands on the north coast, military and penal settlements were established, but from want of further emigration these were abandoned. King completed a great amount of marine surveying on these voyages, which occurred between the years 1813 and 1822.

his rival Burke having been
might have been first, but
valued his rival, and wasted
fitting when he might have
two if not one journey; for
watered country the whole
mainly the South Austra-
Telegraph Line, though it
Stuart had something like
unknown country in front
Burke and Wills had
conducted some minor
undertook his greater one.
South Australia's heroes,
accordingly. He died
the completion of his last

ably the most melancholy
of Australian exploration,
and Wills. The people
colony of Victoria deter-
edition to explore Central
re's Creek to the shores of
the mouth of the Albert
ance in a straight line of
red miles; and as every-
takes must always be on
this. One colonist gave
subscribed, and then
matter in hand to fit
ing Expedition. Camels
m India, and everything
when I say everything,
thing—the leader was

occurred to these adventurers, Australia, and Queensland each South Australia sent John Gray's grave, and afterwards to Carpentaria, where, not he expected, he had an reach a Queensland cattle Denison on the eastern coast. Elsborough by sea to Carpen- landed and left to live or die as course he had a proper equip- and gear. He followed up Stokes, had a fine country to head of the Warrago, and River in New South Wales. traces whatever of Burke. Expedition under Walker, with troopers. Walker, cross- found a tree of Leichhardt's westerly known. Walker without seeing any traces of Wills; but at the mouth of master of the vessel that Tugh; the master had seen Burke. Another expedition and called the Victorian dition, was placed under Howitt in 1861. At this med Conn, and I were out uns, and were in retreat we met Howitt going out. peatedly urged my com- from which we were then away, in vain. I urged

' a white shepherd
which the letter L
of Landsborough's
. by Leichhardt, it
Port Essington in
ıcamped upon the
ʏ telegraph to Mel-
ces of Leichhardt,
ınd a committee of
d of nearly £4000,
Ladies' Leichhardt
ble object was to
mementoes, if not
ıst resting-place of
s companions, was
and. About sixty
obtained for this
this splendid but
ignation is a mild
ards the man who
an undertaking.
ɔuld do to ensure
ed a better fate,
en obtained, if not
rers, at least by a
e of the western
before it. The
ie that Baron von
expedition none
. It was ruined
f its labours, for,
ion, it was un-
and of the wrong
tion occurred in

ped open the marked bags
ing horses' backs, and ex-
les there were. One white
whom all honour, refused
others poured the boiling
hed and burning throats,
as described by Barnes,
hile the unfortunate pack-
oaded as they were, and
weighed down by their
of which were ever re-
food supply and nearly
the expedition was lost;
none of these wretches
although I heard some
The return of McIntyre
water saved their lives
his chagrin and surprise
where he had left them,
delirious, with all the
expected to meet them
In consequence of the
it was impossible to be
thus all was lost. This
McIntyre obtained
across to the Flinders
fever, and died. Thus
Search Expedition" en-
camels were subsequently
brother for the cost of
been carried by them to
cted an excellent pastoral
died. It was the same

doctor that got into trouble with the Government concerning the kidnapping of islanders in the South Seas, and narrow escaped severe, if not capital, punishment.

In 1866, Mr. Cowle conducted an expedition to Roebourne, near Nicol Bay, on the West coast, for four or five hundred miles to the Fitzroy, discovered by Wickham, at the bottom of the Sound.

In 1869, a report having spread in Australia of the massacre of some white people by the natives somewhere to the eastwards of Champion Bay, on the west coast, the rumour was supposed to relate to Leichhardt and his party, and upon the representations of Baron von Mueller to the West Australian Government, a young surveyor named John Forrest was despatched to investigate the truth of the story. This expedition penetrated some distance to the eastwards, but could discover no traces of the lost, or indeed anything appertaining to any travellers whatever.

In 1869–70, John Forrest, accompanied by his brother Alexander, was again equipped by the West Australian Government for an exploring expedition eastwards, with the object of endeavouring to find a new settlements by a new route from the South Australian Eyre's track inland. Forrest, however, followed Eyre's track along the shores of the Great Australian Bight, and may be said to have made no discovery of any occasion at all, as he did not on any occasion go inland more than about thirty miles from the coast. At an old encampment Forrest found the skeleton of one of Eyre's horses, which had been left

e brought with him

r Forrest conducted
ls, from the West
only succeeded in
Hunt and Lefroy's

s an outline of the
oration in Australia
the year 1872; and
e called, as Tenny-
ales of science, still
ong results of time.
lic expeditions and
latter will not be
t because there were
t because they were
th other persons, for
xperiences of hunger,
natives during those
of any monotony they
It is, however, to my
shall now confine my

ting desire that induce
the arduous tasks that
he pleasure and delight
nknown places, are only
t, especially when he is
his first attempt had not
its objects.
editions were conducted
all my after journeys I

onderful ships of
travels and ad-
orded could not
hould I now be
oor a tale, this
second expedi-
to push across
g points, upon
ital Telegraph
tern Australia.
irely by Baron
. G. D. Gill,
nterprise by a
nichael, whom
ntributed his
arthest point
o miles from
reaching the
lat. 25° 55′
ton and his
gentlemen
they were
edition to
apitalists of
mas Elder
ned that a
n, for the
em, under
e. This
, though
ch a feel-
ot of the
lt if ever
d.

: two such formidable
, attempt what I had
l with camels by Sir
: competing with them
could only command
nown to Sir Thomas
n Australia who pos-

s starting away simul-
as I had turned my
l me at once that my
as a Victorian, had
nment of South Aus-
the question which I
olve—namely, the ex-
ior, and the possibility
ute for stock through
ttlements upon the
emark, had been the
ers from the time of
o my own time. It
tralia had no desire
er own territories, by
child;" hence the
nmediately upon my
legram to my friend
work, and with un-
l a new fund from
the rival colony of
the information I
t, the Government
d this fund by the
t.

munificent subsidy of £250, provide
money in fresh explorations, and s
Government, at the termination of
copy of the map and journal of n
My poverty, and not my will, consen
so mean a gift. As a new, though lim
now placed at my disposal, I had no
decline a fresh attempt, and thus my
dition was undertaken; and such d
used by Baron Mueller and myself,
again in the field, with horses only, not
later than my rivals.

On this journey I was accompanied and
by Mr. William Henry Tietkens. We
been scholars at Christ's Hospital in
though many years apart. Of the toils and
tures of my second expedition the readers
book must form their own opinion; and alth
was again unsuccessful in carrying out my
and the expedition ended in the death
member, and in misfortune and starvation
others, still I have been told by a few partia
that it was really a splendid failure. On
pedition I explored a line of nearly 700
previously unknown country, in a straight
my starting point.

During my first and second expediti
been fortunate in the discovery of larg
mountain country, permanently watered
fully grassed, and, as spaces of enormous
remained to be explored, I decided to
the field, provided I could secure the us
These volumes will co the narrat

INTRODUCTION.

In the preface to this work I
e of the physical and colonial
so that my reader may even-
in imagination only, to the
ff
journeys, and into the field of

PREFACE.

THE Island Continent of Australia con
area of about three millions of square miles,
so to say, an elliptically-shaped mass abou
miles in length from east to west, and 2000
north to south. The degrees of latitude
longitude it occupies will be shown by the
accompanying these volumes.

The continent is divided into five sep
colonies, whose respective capitals are sit
several hundreds of miles apart. The oldest
is New South Wales. The largest in a
Western Australia, next comes South Aus
then Queensland, New South Wales, and
Victoria, which, though the smallest in area,
the first in importance among the group.
no wonder that Mitchell, the Surveyor-Ge
New South Wales, designated that regio
tralia Felix."

It may be strange, but it is no less
there is almost as great a difference
fiscal laws and governments of the
tralian Colonies as between those of
in Europe—the only thing in comm
language and the money of the B
Although, however, they agree to

oubt of the loyalty of
eir parent nation. I
matter, as, although
n to my subject. I
he colony or colonies
travels led me, and
ralia, where my first

vast extent of country
which must become
it extends from the
ıbracing the whole
ıdian Ocean at the
alia possesses one
onies, from the geo-
territory extending,
dle right across the
the Indian Ocean.
e in extreme length
of nearly 700, and
his vast region the
tal Telegraph line
Augusta, to Port

ıy first expedition
ıd just been com-
ride the continent
pose I then had
explored and the
l years previous
esired to be the
vn region, where,
ıe, no white man's
ıd, its owner had

never brought it back, nor told the ever been a delighted student of the voyages and discoveries, from Robins Anson and Cook, and the exploits on brilliant accounts given by Sturt, Mitc Grey, Leichhardt, and Kennedy, constan my imagination, as my own travels of future rovers, and continually spurr to emulate them in the pursuit the eminently graced.

My object, as indeed had been Leichhar to force my way across the thousand m lay untrodden and unknown, between the Australian telegraph line and the settlement the Swan River. What hopes I formed, aspirations came of what might be my fortu I trust it will be believed that an explorer be an imaginative as well as a practical cre to discover in that unknown space. Here I remark that the exploration of 1000 mil Australia is equal to 10,000 in any other P the earth's surface, always excepting Arcti Antarctic travels.

There was room for snowy mountains, an sea, ancient river, and palmy plain, for races kinds of men inhabiting a new and odoro for fields of gold and golcondas of gems, f flora and a new fauna, and, above all the bined, there was room for me! Many we friends tried to dissuade me altogether deavoured to instil into my mind that ardently wished to attempt was simply suicide, and to persuade me of the t poetic line, that the sad eye of exp

glow, so that, like Falstaff, I met
by the remark that they
spite of their experience,
of youth's radiant glow, I
wever, and at last I met
who, himself an explorer
always had the cause of
heart, and he assisting, I
take the field. Baron
ted, and it was deemed
make a peculiar feature near
mbers' Pillar, my point of
This Pillar is situated in
33° 50′, being 1200 miles
ight line, over which dis-
lack boy, and I travelled.
els from Melbourne to the
Port Augusta, a seaport
at the head of Spencer's
first visited by the Inves-
a few miles to the east-
mountains runs along for
the gallant navigator's
250 miles now connects
laide. To this town was
Transcontinental telegraph
those days the last place
my expedition. Various
ected along the line, the
each being from 150 to
eleven stations between
arwin. A railway is now
Peake Telegraph Station,
twards from Port Augusta

along the telegraph line towards Por
which it will no doubt be carried befor
elapse.

From Port Augusta the Flinders
almost northerly for nearly 200 miles,
numerous creeks,* through rocky pin
and gorges, these all emptying, in tir
into the salt lake Torrens, that peculia
which baffled Eyre in 1840—1. Capt
the Surveyor-General of the Colony, d
old horse-shoe-shaped illusion of this f
discovered that there were several simila
instead of one. As far as the Flinders
tends northwards, the water supply of the
in that region is obtained from its water
The country beyond, where this long range
continues an extensive open stony plateau o
occasionally intersected with watercourse
course of the line of road being west of
Most of these watercourses on the plains fa
Lake Eyre, another and more northerly salt
sion. A curious limestone formation now
and for some hundreds of miles the whole c
is open and studded with what are called
springs. These are usually about fifty fee
and ornamented on the summit with clu
tall reeds or bulrushes. These mounds are
artesian wells, through which the water, fo
from below, gushes out over the tops to t
ground, where it forms little water-cha

* I must here remark that throughout this work the
will often occur. This is not to be considered in
acceptation of an inlet from the sea, but, no matter ho
it means, in Australia a watercourse.

:hese
mits,
ound
' 20′,

ı and
gene-
la-ish
vards
h for

attle,
tele-
being
rings,
ies a
ound-
: the
these
War-
have
er to
tele-
eake,
ward,
: the
ed by
beds.
ve to
flood
oper
stern
dred
The

chief among the latter is the huge artery, the Finke, from the north-west.

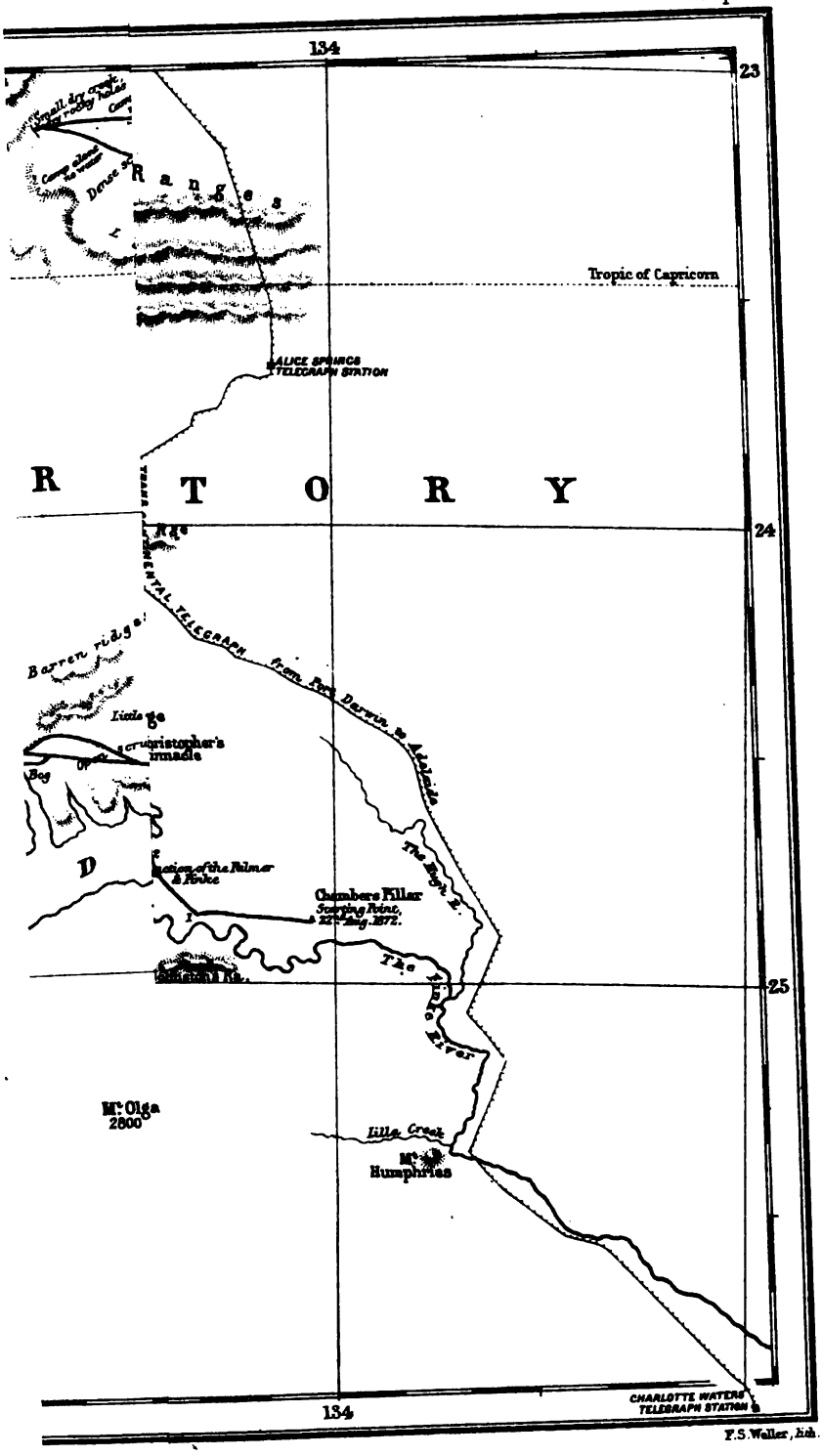
The Charlotte Waters Station, named after Lady Charlotte Bacon, the Ianthe of Byron, which was to be my last outpost of civilisation, is a quadrangular stone building, plastered or painted white, having a corrugated iron roof, and a courtyard enclosed by the two wings of the building, having loop-holes in the walls for rifles and musketry, a cemented water-tank dug under the yard, and tall heavy iron gates to secure the place from attack by the natives.

I may here relate an occurrence at a station farther up the line, built upon the same principle. One evening, while the telegraph master and staff were sitting outside the gates after the heat of the day, the natives, knowing that the stand of arms was inside the courtyard, sent some of their warriors to creep unseen inside and slam the gates, so as to prevent retreat. Then from the outside an attempt to massacre was made; several whites were speared, some were killed on the spot, others died soon afterwards, but the greatest wonder was that any at all escaped.

The establishment at the Charlotte Waters stands on a large grassy and pebbly plain, bounded on the north by a watercourse half a mile away. The natives here have always been peaceful, and never displayed any hostility to the whites. From this last station I made my way to Chambers' Pillar, which was to be my actual starting-point for the west.

BOOK I.

Map N°1.



F.S. Weller, lith.

AUSTRALIA TWICE TRAVERSED.

CHAPTER I.

FROM 4TH TO 30TH AUGUST, 1872.

The party—Port Augusta—The road—The Peake—Stony plateau—Telegraph station—Natives formerly hostile—A new member—Leave the Peake—Black boy deserts—Reach the Charlotte Waters Station—Natives' account of other natives—Leave last outpost—Reach the Finke—A Government party—A ride westward—End of the stony plateau—A sandhill region—Chambers' Pillar—The Moloch horridus—Thermometer 18°—The Finke—Johnstone's range—A night alarm—Beautiful trees—Wild ducks—A tributary—High dark hill—Country rises in altitude—Very high sandhills—Quicksands—New ranges—A brush ford—New pigeon—Pointed hill—A clay pan—Christopher's Pinnacle—Chandler's Range—Another new range—Sounds of running water—First natives seen—Name of the river—A Central Australian warrior—Natives burning the country—Name a new creek—Ascend a mountain—Vivid green—Discover a glen and more mountains—Hot winds, smoke and ashes.

THE personnel of my first expedition into the interior consisted in the first instance of myself, Mr. Carmichael, and a young black boy. I intended to engage the services of another white man at the furthest outpost that I could secure one. From Port Augusta I despatched the bulk of my stores by

a team to the Peake, and made a leisurely progress up the overland road viâ Beltana, the Finniss and Strangways Springs stations. Our stores reached the Peake station before us. This station was originally called Mount Margaret, but subsequently removed to the mound-springs near the south bank of the Peake Creek; it was a cattle station formed by Mr. Phillip Levi of Adelaide. The character of the country is an open stony plateau, upon which lines of hills or ranges rise; it is intersected by numerous watercourses, all trending to Lake Eyre, and was an excellent cattle run. The South Australian Government erected the telegraph station in the immediate vicinity of the cattle station. When the cattle station was first formed in 1862 the natives were very numerous and very hostile, but at the time of my visit, ten years later, they were comparatively civilised. At the Peake we were enabled to re-shoe all our horses, for the stony road up from Port Augusta had worn out all that were put on there. I also had an extra set fitted for each horse, rolled up in calico, and marked with its name. At the Peake I engaged a young man named Alec Robinson, who, according to his account, could do everything, and had been everywhere, who knew the country I was about to explore perfectly well, and who had frequently met and camped with blacks from the west coast, and declared we could easily go over there in a few weeks. He died at one of the telegraph stations a year or two after he left me. I must say he was very good at cooking, and shoeing horses. I am able to do these useful works myself, but I do not relish either. I had brought a light little spring cart with me all the way from

Melbourne to the Peake, which I sold here, and my means of transit from thence was with pack-horses. After a rather prolonged sojourn at the Peake, where I received great hospitality from Mr. Blood, of the Telegraph Department, and from Messrs. Bagot, the owners, and Mr. Conway, the manager, we departed for the Charlotte.

My little black boy Dick, or, as he used generally to write, and call himself, Richard Giles Kew, 1872, had been at school at Kew, near Melbourne. He came to me from Queensland; he had visited Adelaide, Melbourne, and Sydney, and had been with me for nearly three years, but his fears of wild natives were terribly excited by what nearly everybody we met said to him about them. This was not surprising, as it was usually something to this effect, in bush parlance: "By G——, young feller, just you look out when you get *outside!* The wild blacks will [adjective] soon cook you. They'll kill *you* first, you know—they *will* like to cut out your kidney fat! They'll sneak on yer when yer goes out after the horses, they'll have yer and eat yer." This being the burden of the strain continually dinned into the boy's ears, made him so terrified and nervous the farther we got away from civilisation, that soon after leaving the Peake, as we were camping one night with some bullock teams returning south, the same stories having been told him over again, he at last made up his mind, and told me he wanted to go back with one of the teamsters; he had hinted about this before, and both Carmichael and Robinson seemed to be aware of his intention. Force was useless to detain him; argument was lost on him,

and entreaty I did not attempt, so in the morning we parted. I shall mention him again by-and-bye. He was a small, very handsome, light-complexioned, very intelligent, but childish boy, and was frequently mistaken for a half-caste; he was a splendid rider and tracker, and knew almost everything. He was a great wit, as one remark of his will show. In travelling up the country after he had been at school, we once saw some old deserted native gunyahs, and he said to me as we rode by, pointing to them, "Gentleman's 'ouse, villa residence, I s'pose, he's gone to his watering place for the season p'r'aps." At another time, being at a place called Crowlands, he asked me why it was called so. I replied, pointing to a crow on a tree, "Why, there's the crow," and stamping with my foot on the ground, "there's the land;" he immediately said, "Oh, now I know why my country is called Queensland, because it's land belonging to our Queen." I said, "Certainly it is;" then he said, "Well, ain't it funny? I never knew that before." In Melbourne, one day, we were leaning out of a window overlooking the people continually passing by. Dick said, "What for,—white fellow always walk about—walk about in town—when he always rides in the bush?" I said, "Oh, to do their business." "Business," he asked, "what's that?" I said, "Why, to get money, to be sure." "Money," he said; "white fellow can't pick up money in the street."

From the Peake we had only pack-horses and one little Scotch terrier dog. Dick left us at Hann's Creek, thirty miles from the Peake. On our road up, about halfway between the Peake and

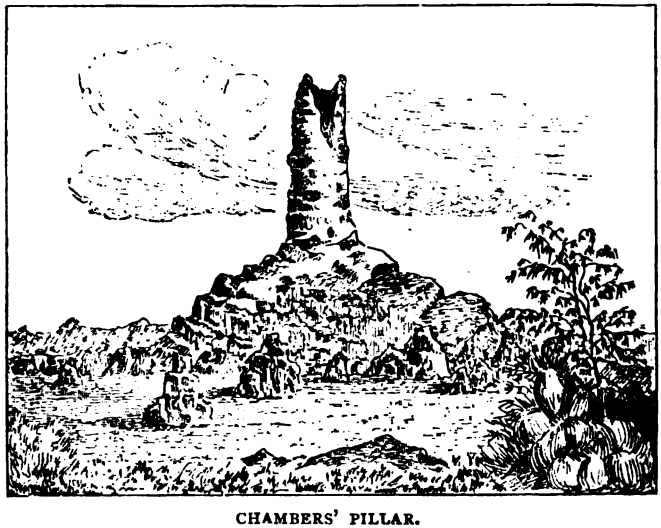
the Charlotte, we crossed and camped at a large creek which runs into the Finke, called the Alberga. Here we met a few natives, who were friendly enough, but who were known to be great thieves, having stolen things from several bullock drays, and committed other robberies; so we had to keep a sharp look out upon them and their actions. One of their number, a young man, could speak English pretty well, and could actually sing some songs. His most successful effort in that line was the song of "Jim Crow," and he performed the "turn about and wheel about and do just so" part of it until he got giddy, or pretended to be; and to get rid of him and his brethren, we gave them some flour and a smoke of tobacco, and they departed.

We arrived at the Charlotte Waters station on the 4th of August, 1872; this was actually my last outpost of civilisation. My companion, Mr. Carmichael, and I were most kindly welcomed by Mr. Johnstone, the officer in charge of this depot, and by Mr. Chandler, a gentleman belonging to a telegraph station farther up the line. In consequence of their kindness, our stay was lengthened to a week. My horses were all the better for the short respite, for they were by no means in good fettle; but the country having been visited by rains, grass was abundant, and the animals improving. The party consisted only of myself, Carmichael, and Robinson; I could not now obtain another man to make up our original number of four. We still had the little dog. During our stay at the Charlotte I inquired of a number of the natives for information concerning the region beyond, to the west and north-west. They often used the words "Larapinta and plenty

black fellow." Of the country to the west they seemed to know more, but it was very difficult to get positive statements. The gist of their information was that there were large waters, high mountains, and plenty, plenty, wild black fellow; they said the wild blacks were very big and fat, and had hair growing, as some said, all down their backs; while others asserted that the hair grew all over their bodies, and that they eat pickaninnies, and sometimes came eastward and killed any of the members of the Charlotte tribe that they could find, and carried off all the women they could catch. On the 12th we departed, and my intended starting point being Chambers' Pillar, upon the Finke River, I proceeded up the telegraph road as far as the crossing place of the above-named watercourse, which was sixty miles by the road.

In the evening of the day we encamped there, a Government party, under the charge of Mr. McMinn, surveyor, and accompanied by Mr. Harley Bacon, a son of Lady Charlotte Bacon, arrived from the north, and we had their company at the camp. Close to this crossing-place a large tributary joins the Finke near the foot of Mount Humphries. On the following day Mr. McMinn, Mr. Bacon, and I rode up its channel, and at about twelve miles we found a water-hole and returned. The country consisted chiefly of open sandhills well grassed. I mentioned previously that from Port Augusta, northwards and north-westwards, the whole region consists of an open stony plateau, upon which mountain ranges stand at various distances; through and from these, a number of watercourses run, and, on a section of this plateau, nearly 200 miles in extent,

the curious mound-springs exist. This formation, mostly of limestone, ceases at, or immediately before reaching, the Finke, and then a formation of heavy red sandhills begins. Next day our friends departed for the Charlotte, after making me several presents. From Mr. McMinn I obtained the course and distance of the pillar from our camp, and travelling on the course given, we crossed the Finke three times, as it wound about so snake-like across the country. On the 22nd we encamped upon it, having the pillar in full view.



CHAMBERS' PILLAR.

The appearance of this feature I should imagine to be unique. For a detailed account of it my reader must consult Stuart's report. Approaching the pillar from the south, the traveller must pass over a series of red sandhills, covered with some scrubs, and clothed near the ground with that abominable vegetable production, the so-

called spinifex or porcupine grass—botanically, the *Triodia*, or *Festuca irritans*. The timber on the sandhills near the pillar is nearly all mulga, a very hard acacia, though a few tall and well-grown casuarinas—of a kind that is new to me, viz., the *C. Decaisneana*—are occasionally met.* On our route Mr. Carmichael brought to me a most peculiar little lizard, a true native of the soil; its colour was a yellowish-green; it was armed, or ornamented, at points and joints, with spines, in a row along its back, sides, and legs; these were curved, and almost sharp; on the back of its neck was a thick knotty lump, with a spine at each side, by which I lifted it; its tail was armed with spines to the point, and was of proportional length to its body. The lizard was about eight inches in length. Naturalists have christened this harmless little chameleon the Moloch horridus. I put the little

THE MOLOCH HORRIDUS.

creature in a pouch, and intended to preserve it, but it managed to crawl out of its receptacle, and dropped again to its native sand. I had one of these lizards, as a pet, for months in Melbourne. It was finally trodden on and died. It used to eat sugar.

* These trees have almost a palm-like appearance, and look like huge mops; but they grow in the driest regions.

By this time we were close to the pillar: its outline was most imposing. Upon reaching it, I found it to be a columnar structure, standing upon a pedestal, which is perhaps eighty feet high, and composed of loose white sandstone, having vast numbers of large blocks lying about in all directions. From the centre of the pedestal rises the pillar, composed also of the same kind of rock; at its top, and for twenty to thirty feet from its summit, the colour of the stone is red. The column itself must be seventy or eighty feet above the pedestal. It is split at the top into two points. There it stands, a vast monument of the geological periods that must have elapsed since the mountain ridge, of which it was formerly a part, was washed by the action of old Ocean's waves into mere sandhills at its feet. The stone is so friable that names can be cut in it to almost any depth with a pocket-knife: so loose, indeed, is it, that one almost feels alarmed lest it should fall while he is scratching at its base. In a small orifice or chamber of the pillar I discovered an opossum asleep, the first I had seen in this part of the country. We turned our backs upon this peculiar monument, and left it in its loneliness and its grandeur—"clothed in white sandstone, mystic, wonderful!"

From hence we travelled nearly west, and in seventeen miles came to some very high sandhills, at whose feet the river swept. We followed round them to a convenient spot, and one where our horses could water without bogging. The bed of the Finke is the most boggy creek-channel I have ever met. As we had travelled several miles in the morning to the pillar, and

camped eighteen beyond it, it was late in the afternoon when we encamped. The country we passed over was mostly scrubby sandhills, covered with porcupine grass. Where we struck the channel there was a long hole of brine. There was plenty of good grass on the river flat; and we got some tolerably good water where we fixed our camp. When we had finished our evening meal, the shades of night descended upon us, in this our first bivouac in the unknown interior. By observations of the bright stars Vega and Altair, I found my latitude was 24° 52′ 15″; the night was excessively cold, and by daylight next morning the thermometer had fallen to 18°. Our blankets and packs were covered with a thick coating of ice; and tea left in our pannikins overnight had become solid cakes.

The country here being soft and sandy, we unshod all the horses and carried the shoes. So far as I could discern with the glasses, the river channel came from the west, but I decided to go north-west, as I was sure it would turn more northerly in time; and I dreaded being caught in a long bend, and having to turn back many miles, or chance the loss of some or all the horses in a boggy crossing. To the south a line of hills appeared, where the natives were burning the spinifex in all directions. These hills had the appearance of red sandstone; and they had a series of ancient ocean watermarks along their northern face, traceable for miles. This I called Johnstone's Range. As another night approached, we could see, to the north, the brilliant flames of large grass fires, which had only recently been started by some prowling sons of the soil, upon their becoming aware of our presence in their

domain. The nights now were usually very cold. One night some wild man or beast must have been prowling around our camp, for my little dog Monkey exhibited signs of great perturbation for several hours. We kept awake, listening for some sounds that might give us an idea of the intruders; and being sure that we heard the tones of human voices, we got our rifles in readiness. The little dog barked still more furiously, but the sounds departed: we heard them no more: and the rest of the night passed in silence—in silence and beautiful rest.

We had not yet even sighted the Finke, upon my north-west course; but I determined to continue, and was rewarded by coming suddenly upon it under the foot of high sandhills. Its course now was a good deal to the north. The horses being heavily packed, and the spinifex distressing them so much, we found a convenient spot where the animals could water without bogging, and camped. Hard by, were some clumps of the fine-looking casuarinas; they grow to a height of twenty to twenty-five feet of barrel without a branch, and then spread out to a fine umbrella top; they flourish out of pure red sand. The large sheet of water at the camp had wild ducks on it: some of these we shot. The day was very agreeable, with cool breezes from the north-west. A tributary joins the Finke here from the west, and a high dark hill forms its southern embankment: the western horizon is bounded by broken lines of hills, of no great elevation. As we ascend the river, the country gradually rises, and we are here about 250 feet above the level of the Charlotte Waters Station.

Finding the river now trended not only northerly, but even east of north, we had to go in that direction, passing over some very high sandhills, where we met the Finke at almost right angles. Although the country was quite open, it was impossible to see the river channel, even though fringed with rows of splendid gum-trees, for any distance, as it became hidden by the high sandhills. I was very reluctant to cross, on account of the frightfully boggy bed of the creek, but, rather than travel several miles roundabout, I decided to try it. We got over, certainly, but to see one's horses and loads sinking bodily in a mass of quaking quicksand is by no means an agreeable sight, and it was only by urging the animals on with stock-whips, to prevent them delaying, that we accomplished the crossing without loss. Our riding horses got the worst of it, as the bed was so fearfully ploughed up by the pack-horses ahead of them. The whole bed of this peculiar creek appears to be a quicksand, and when I say it was nearly a quarter of a mile wide, its formidable nature will be understood. Here a stream of slightly brackish water was trickling down the bed in a much narrower channel, however, than its whole width; and where the water appears upon the surface, there the bog is most to be apprehended. Sometimes it runs under one bank, sometimes under the opposite, and again, at other places the water occupies the mid-channel. A horse may walk upon apparently firm sand towards the stream, when, without a second's warning, horse and rider may be engulfed in quicksand; but in other places, where it is firmer, it will quake for yards all round, and thus give some slight warning.

Crossing safely, and now having the river on my right hand, we continued our journey, sighting a continuous range of hills to the north, which ran east and west, and with the glasses I could see the river trending towards them. I changed my course for a conspicuous hill in this new line, which brought me to the river again at right angles; and, having so successfully crossed in the morning, I decided to try it again. We descended to the bank, and after great trouble found a spot firm enough and large enough to allow all the horses to stand upon it at one time, but we could not find a place where they could climb the opposite bank, for under it was a long reach of water, and a quagmire extending for more than a mile on either side. Two of our riding-horses were badly bogged in trying to find a get-away: finally, we had to cut boughs and sticks, and bridge the the place over with them. Thus we eventually got the horses over one by one without accident or loss. In four miles we touched on a bend of the river again, but had no occasion to recross, as it was not in our road. This day, having wasted so much time in the crossings, we travelled only fifteen miles. The horizon from this camp was bounded from south-west, and west, round by north, to north-west, by ranges; which I was not sorry to perceive. Those to the west, and south-west, were the highest and most pointed. It appears that the Finke must come under or through some of those to the north-west. To-day I observed a most beautiful pigeon, quite new to me; it was of a dark-brown colour, mottled under the throat and on the breast; it had also a high top-knot. It is considerably smaller

than the Sturt pigeon of his Central Australian expedition.

It was now the 28th of August, and the temperature of the atmosphere was getting warmer. Journeying now again about north-west, we reached a peculiar pointed hill with the Finke at its foot. We passed over the usual red sandhill country covered with the porcupine grass, characteristic of the Finke country, and saw a shallow sheet of yellow rain water in a large clay pan, which is quite an unusual feature in this part of the world, clay being so conspicuous by its absence. The hill, when we reached it, assumed the appearance of a high pinnacle; broken fragments of rock upon its sides and summit showed it too rough and precipitous to climb with any degree of pleasure. I named it Christopher's Pinnacle, after a namesake of mine. The range behind it I named Chandler's Range. For some miles we had seen very little porcupine grass, but here we came into it again, to the manifest disgust of our horses. We had now a line of hills on our right, with the river on our left hand, and in six or seven miles came to the west end of Chandler's Range, and could see to the north and north-west another, and much higher line running parallel to Chandler's Range, but extending to the west as far as I could see. The country hereabouts has been nearly all burnt by the natives, and the horses endeavour to pick roads where the dreaded triodia has been destroyed.

We passed a few clumps of casuarinas and a few stunted trees with broad, poplar-like leaves. Travelling for twelve miles on this bearing, we struck the Finke again, running nearly north and south. Here

the river had a stony bed with a fine reach of water in it; so to-night at least our anxiety as regards the horses bogging is at an end. The stream purling over its stony floor produces a most agreeable sound, such as I have not heard for many a day. Here I might say, "Brightly the brook through the green leaflets, giddy with joyousness, dances along."

Soon after we had unpacked and let go our horses, we were accosted by a native on the opposite side of the creek. Our little dog became furious; then two natives appeared. We made an attempt at a long conversation, but signally failed, for neither of us knew many of the words the other was saying. The only bit of information I obtained from them was their name for the river—as they kept continually pointing to it and repeating the word Larapinta. This word, among the Peake and Charlotte natives, means a snake, and from the continual serpentine windings of this peculiar and only Central Australian river, no doubt the name is derived. I shot a hawk for them, and they departed. The weather to-day was fine, with agreeable cool breezes; the sky has become rather overcast; the flies are very numerous and troublesome; and it seems probable we may have a slight fall of rain before long.

A few drops of rain fell during the night, which made me regret that I had not had our tarpaulins erected, though no more fell. In the morning there was sultriness in the air though the sky was clear; the thermometer stood at 52°, and at sunrise a smoky haze pervaded the whole sky. Whilst we were packing up the horses this morning, the same

two natives whom we saw last night, again made their appearance, bringing with them a third, who was painted, feathered, greased, and red-ochred, in, as they doubtless thought, the most alarming manner. I had just mounted my horse, and rode towards them, thinking to get some more information from the warrior as to the course of the creek, &c., but when they saw the horse approaching they scampered off, and the bedizened warrior projected himself into the friendly branches of the nearest tree with the most astonishing velocity. Perceiving that it was useless to try to approach them, without actually running them to earth, we left them; and crossing the river easily over its stony bed, we continued north-west towards a mountain in the ranges that traversed the horizon in that direction. The river appeared to come from the same spot. A breeze from the north-west caused the dust raised by the pack-horses, which we drove in a mob before us, travelling upon the loose soil where the spinifex had all been lately burnt, to blow directly in our faces. At five miles we struck on a bend of the river, and we saw great volumes of smoke from burning grass and triodia rising in all directions. The natives find it easier to catch game when the ground is bare, or covered only with a short vegetation, than when it is clothed with thick coarse grasses or pungent shrubs. A tributary from the north, or east of north, joined the Finke on this course, but it was destitute of water at the junction. Soon now the river swept round to the westward, along the foot of the hills we were approaching. Here a tributary from the west joined, having a slender stream of water running along its bed. It

was exceedingly boggy, and we had to pass up along it for over two miles before we could find a place to cross to enable us to reach the main stream, now to the north of us. I called this McMinn's Creek.

On reaching the Finke we encamped. In the evening I ascended a mountain to the north-westward of us. It was very rough, stony, and precipitous, and composed of red sandstone; its summit was some 800 feet above our camp. It had little other vegetation upon it than huge plots of triodia, of the most beautiful and vivid green, and set with the most formidable spines. Whenever one moves, these spines enter the clothes in all directions, making it quite a torture to walk about among them. From here I could see that the Finke turned up towards these hills through a glen, in a north-westerly direction. Other mountains appeared to the north and north-west; indeed this seemed to be a range of mountains of great length and breadth. To the eastwards it may stretch to the telegraph line, and to the west as far as the eye could see. The sun had gone down before I had finished taking bearings. Our road to-morrow will be up through the glen from which the river issues. All day a most objectionable hot wind has been blowing, and clouds of smoke and ashes from the fires, and masses of dust from the loose soil ploughed up by the horses in front of us, and blowing in our faces, made it one of the most disagreeable days I ever passed. At night, however, a contrast obtained—the wind dropped, and a calm, clear, and beautiful night succeeded to the hot, smoky, and dusty day. Vega alone gave me my latitude here, close to the

4° 25′ 12″; and, though the
and disagreeable, the night
the thermometer falling to
re was no frost, or even any

CHAPTER II.

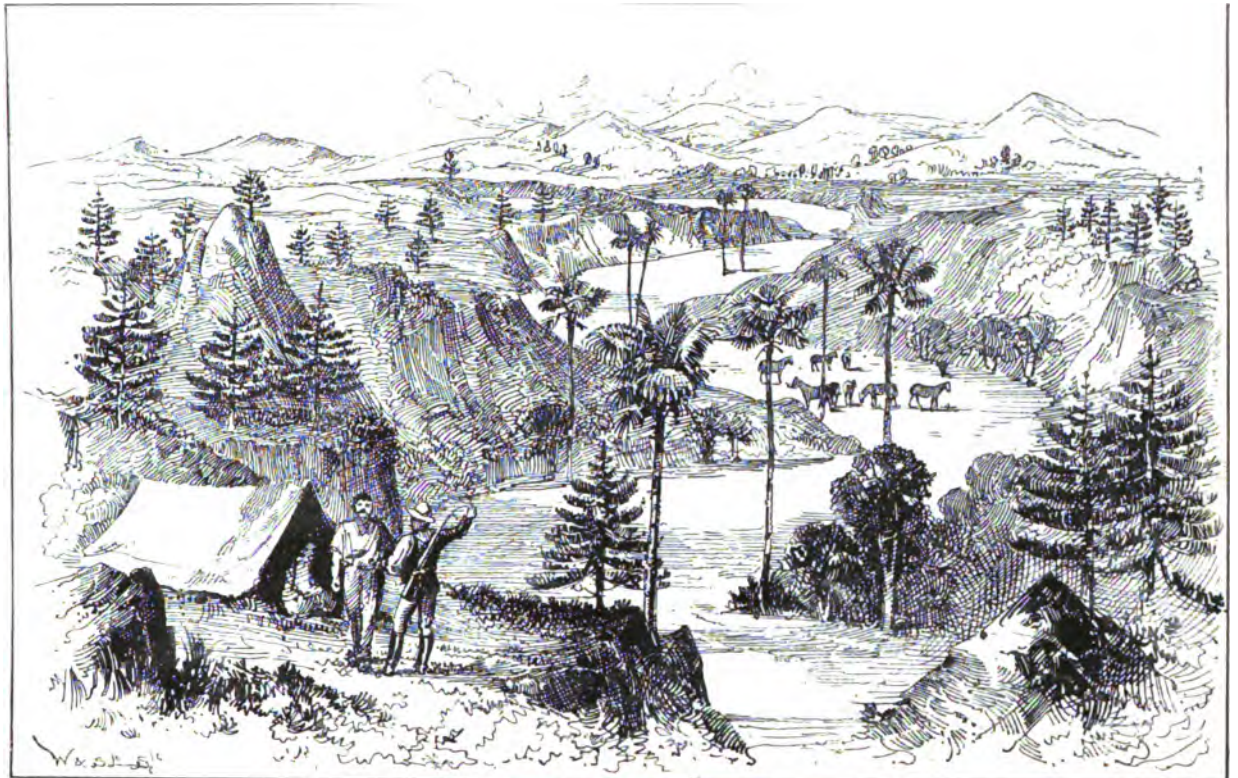
FROM 30TH AUGUST TO 6TH SEPTEMBER, 1872.

Milk thistle—In the glen—A serpentine and rocky road—Name a new creek—Grotesque hills—Caves and caverns—Cypress pines—More natives—Astonish them—Agreeable scenery—Sentinel stars—Pelicans—Wild and picturesque scenery—More natives—Palm-trees—A junction in the glen—High ranges to the north—Palms and flowers—The Glen of Palms—Slight rain—Rain at night—Plant various seeds—End of the glen—Its length—Krichauff Range—The northern range—Level country between—A gorge—A flooded channel—Cross a western tributary—Wild ducks—Ramble among the mountains—Their altitude—A splendid panorama—Progress stopped by a torrent and impassable gorge.

OUR start this morning was late, some of our horses having wandered in the night, the feed at the camp not being very good; indeed the only green herb met by us, for some considerable distance, has been the sow or milk thistle (*Sonchus oleraceus*), which grows to a considerable height. Of this the horses are extremely fond; it is also very fattening. Entering the mouth of the glen, in two miles we found ourselves fairly enclosed by the hills, which shut in the river on both sides. We had to follow the windings of the serpentine channel; the mountains occasionally forming steep precipices overhanging the stream, first upon one side, then upon the other. We often had to lead the horses separately over huge ledges

of rock, and frequently had to cut saplings and lever them out of the way, continually crossing and recrossing the river. On camping in the glen we had only made good eleven miles, though to accomplish this we had travelled more than double the distance. At the camp a branch creek came out of the mountains to the westwards, which I named Phillip's Creek. The whole of this line of ranges is composed of red sandstone in large or small fragments, piled up into the most grotesque shapes. Here and there caves and caverns exist in the sides of the hills.

A few trees of the cypress pine (*Callitris*) were seen upon the summits of the higher mounts. The hills and country generally inside this glen are more fertile than those outside, having real grass instead of triodia upon their sides. I saw two or three natives just before camping; they kept upon the opposite side of the water, according to a slight weakness of theirs. Just at the time I saw them, I had my eye on some ducks upon the water in the river bed, I therefore determined to kill two birds with one stone; that is to say, to shoot the ducks and astonish the natives at the same time. I got behind a tree, the natives I could see were watching me most intently the while, and fired. Two ducks only were shot, the remainder of the birds and the natives, apparently, flying away together. Our travels to-day were very agreeable; the day was fine, the breezes cool, and the scenery continually changing, the river taking the most sinuous windings imaginable; the bed of it, as might be expected in such a glen, is rough and stony, and the old fear of the horses bogging has departed from us. By



VIEW IN THE GLEN OF PALMS.

[*Page 23, Vol. I.*

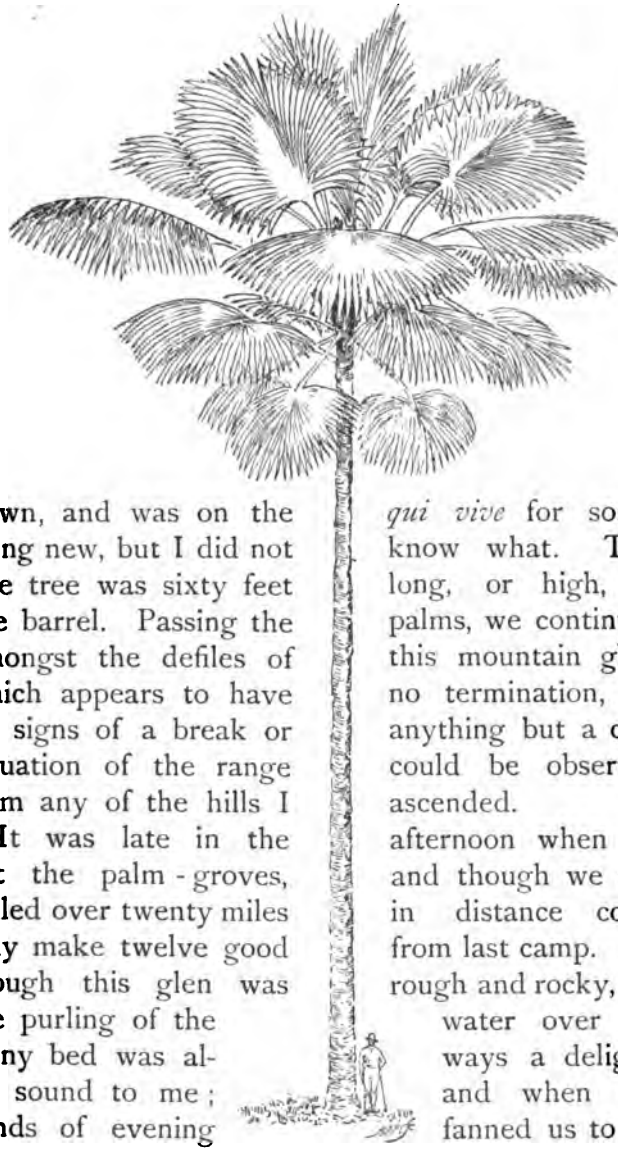
bearings back upon hills at the mouth of the glen I found our course was nearly north 23° west. The night was clear and cold; the stars, those sentinels of the sky, appeared intensely bright. To the explorer they must ever be objects of admiration and love, as to them he is indebted for his guidance through the untrodden wilderness he is traversing. "And sweet it is to watch them in the evening skies weeping dew from their gentle eyes." Several hundred pelicans, those antediluvian birds, made their appearance upon the water early this morning, but seeing us they flew away before a shot could be fired. These birds came from the north-west; indeed, all the aquatic birds that I have seen upon the wing, come and go in that direction. I am in hopes of getting through this glen to-day, for however wild and picturesque the scenery, it is very difficult and bad travelling for the unshod horses; consequently it is difficult to get them along. There was no other road to follow than the windings of the river bed through this mountain-bound glen, in the same manner as yesterday. Soon after starting, I observed several natives ahead of us; immediately upon their discovering us they raised a great outcry, which to our ears did not exactly resemble the agreeable vibration of a melodious sound, it being quite the opposite. Then of course signal fires were made which raised great volumes of smoke, the natives thinking perhaps to intimidate and prevent us from farther advance. Neither of these effects was produced, so their next idea was to depart themselves, and they ran ahead of us up the glen. I also saw another lot of some twenty or thirty scudding away over the rocks and stony

hills—these were probably the women and children. Passing their last night's encampment, we saw that they had left all their valuables behind them—these we left untouched. One old gentleman sought the security of a shield of rock, where this villain upon earth and fiend in upper air most vehemently apostrophised us, and probably ordered us away out of his territory. To the command in itself we paid little heed, but as it fell in with our own ideas, we endeavoured to carry it out as fast as possible. This, I trust, was satisfactory, as I always like to do what pleases others, especially when it coincides with my own views.

> "It's a very fine thing, and delightful to see
> Inclination and duty both join and agree."

Some of the natives near him threatened us with their spears, and waved knobbed sticks at us, but we departed without any harm being done on either side.

Soon after leaving the natives, we had the gratification of discovering a magnificent specimen of the Fan palm, a species of *Livistona*, allied to one in the south of Arnhiem's Land, and now distinguished as the *Maria Palm* (Baron von Mueller), growing in the channel of the watercourse with flood drifts against its stem. Its dark-hued, dome-shaped frondage contrasted strangely with the paler green foliage of the eucalyptus trees that surrounded it. It was a perfectly new botanical feature to me, nor did I expect to meet it in this latitude. "But there's a wonderful power in latitude, it alters a man's moral relations and attitude." I had noticed some strange vegetation in the dry flood drifts lower



down, and was on the *qui vive* for some-
thing new, but I did not know what. This
fine tree was sixty feet long, or high, in
the barrel. Passing the palms, we continued
amongst the defiles of this mountain glen,
which appears to have no termination, for
no signs of a break or anything but a con-
tinuation of the range could be observed
from any of the hills I ascended.

It was late in the afternoon when we
left the palm-groves, and though we tra-
velled over twenty miles in distance could
only make twelve good from last camp. Al-
though this glen was rough and rocky, yet
the purling of the water over its
stony bed was al- ways a delight-
ful sound to me; and when the
winds of evening fanned us to re-

THE PALM-TREE FOUND IN THE GLEN OF PALMS.

pose, it seemed as though some kindly spirit whis-

pered that it would guard us while we slept, and when the sun declined the swift stream echoed on.

The following day being Sunday, the 1st September, I made it a day of rest, for the horses at least, whose feet were getting sore from continued travel over rocks and boulders of stone. I made an excursion into the hills, to endeavour to discover when and where this apparently interminable glen ceased, for with all its grandeur, picturesqueness, and variety, it was such a difficult road for the horses, that I was getting heartily tired of it; besides this, I feared this range might be its actual source, and that I should find myself eventually blocked and stopped by impassable water-choked gorges, and that I should finally have to retreat to where I first entered it. I walked and climbed over several hills, cliffs, and precipices, of red sandstone, to the west of the camp, and at length reached the summit of a pine-clad mountain considerably higher than any other near it. Its elevation was over 1000 feet above the level of the surrounding country. From it I obtained a view to all points of the compass except the west, and could descry mountains, from the north-east round by north to the north-north-west, at which point a very high and pointed mount showed its top above the others in its neighbourhood, over fifty miles away. To the north and east of north a massive chain, with many dome-shaped summits, was visible. Below, towards the camp, I could see the channel of the river where it forced its way under the perpendicular sides of the hills, and at a spot not far above the camp it seemed split in two, or rather was joined by another water-course from the northwards. From the junction

the course of the main
from the west. Along t
at about miles I cou
piece of untry, and w
peared a s eet of water u
a break in the chain, tho
I should travel. Return
imparted t them the resu
On Mon ay, the 2nd, t
that felt like
atmosphere r during the
thermomet ° higher than
60°, over 4 ar. To-day,
from the pi he glen, we p
windings of rday, and co
noticed yes ossing and
precipices, l points of
turning to ad to be t
three miles he beautif
Clumps of ing mostly
passed, grow they cons
they appear, sojourn i
During my I colle
first sparkling
beautiful flowers, wh
therwise desolate gl
y fair flowers of ever
hould scatter such
erile region it is dif
riety of lovely flo
d never met with
leed, delights in
here bright flowe
ht birds. The
name this G

o many of the stately palm trees, I have
the Glen of Palms. Peculiar indeed, and
: too, is this new-found watery glen, en-
y rocky walls; "Where dial-like, to portion
: palm-tree's shadow falls."
we were travelling to-day, a few slight
fell, giving us warning in their way that
alls might come. We were most anxious
the northern mouth of the glen if possible
ght, so heartily tired were we of so con-
serpentine a track; we therefore kept
on. We saw several natives to-day, but
riably fled to the fastnesses of their moun-
es, they raised great volumes of smoke,
- strident vociferations caused a dull and
sound even when out of ear-shot. The
of the rain-drops became heavier, yet we
hoping at every turn to see an opening
uld free us from our prison-house; but
heavier rain together came, and we were
l to remain another night in the palmy
ound a small sloping, sandy, firm piece of
robably the only one in the glen, a little
the creek, having some blood-wood or red
; growing upon it, and above the reach of
-mark—for it is necessary to be careful in
a site on a watercourse, as, otherwise, in a
tant everything might be swept to destruc-
e were fortunate indeed to find such a
s it was large enough for the horses to
and there was some good feed upon it.
me we had our tarpaulins fixed, and every-
der cover, the rain fell in earnest. The
passed this morning was named Ellery's

onsiderable, as it occupies 31′ of latitude.
a bearing of it is nearly north 25° west;
longest feature of the kind I ever tra-
eing over forty miles straight, and over a
miles of actual travelling, and it appeared
pass through the range, which I named the

To the north a higher and more im-
ain existed, apparently about twenty miles
his northern chain must be the western
the McDonnell Range. The river now is
an in the glen; its bed, however, is stony,
oggy, the country level, sandy, and thinly
mostly all the vegetation being burnt by
set alight by the natives.

ng now upon the right bank of this
e cut off most of the bends, which,
were by no means so extensive or so
as in the glen or on the south side of
ng near the river bank, we met but little
grass for the most part of the day's stage,
was abundance of it further off. The
us to the foot of the big mountains, and
d about a mile below a gorge through
ssues. As we neared the new hills, we
are that the late rains were raising the
the river. At six miles before camping
l a tributary joining the Finke at right
n the west, where there are some ranges
ction; a slight stream was running down
My next anxiety is to discover where
comes from, or whether its sources
found in this chain. The day was
fine and cool, the breezes seemed to
echo of an air which Music, sleeping at

to me, and almost under my feet, was the gorge through which the river passes, and it appears to be the only pass through this chain. I approached the precipice overlooking the gorge, and found the channel so flooded by the late rains, that it was impossible to get the horses up through it. The hills which enclosed it were equally impracticable, and it was utterly useless to try to get horses over them. The view to the west was gratifying, for the ranges appeared to run on in undiminished height in that direction, or a little north of it. From the face of several of the hills I climbed to-day, I saw streams of pure water running, probably caused by the late rains. One hill I passed over I found to be composed of pudding-stone, that is to say, a conglomeration of many kinds of stone mostly rounded and mixed up in a mass, and formed by the smothered bubblings of some ancient and ocean-quenched volcano. The surface of the place now more particularly mentioned had been worn smooth by the action of the passage of water, so that it presented the appearance of an enormous tessellated pavement, before which the celebrated Roman one at Bognor, in Sussex, which I remember, when I was a boy, on a visit to Goodwood, though more artistically but not more fantastically arranged, would be compelled to hide its diminished head. In the course of my rambles I noticed a great quantity of beautiful flowers upon the hills, of similar kinds to those collected in the Glen of Palms, and these interested me so greatly, that the day passed before I was aware, and I was made to remember the line, "How noiseless falls the foot of Time that only

or red gum-trees, with their
:, enlivened the scene.
ed with gum-trees, issued from
up which I rode in search of
ctly unsuccessful, as not a drop
fluid was to be found. Upon
this discouraging intelligence to
tumbled upon a small quantity
ı broad, almost square boulder of
bed of the creek. There was not
ts. As the horses had watered
nd as there was a quantity of a
green vetch or small pea, we
ended a small eminence to the
he glasses could distinguish the
w running east and west. I saw
its channel, and at the junction of
e were now on; there was also
. As the horses were feeding
at way, I felt sure they would go
ı the night. It is, however, very
one wants horses to do a certain
tain way, they are almost sure to
ite, and so it was in the present
ng to camp by a circuitous route,
l rocky crevice an additional sup-
cient for our own requirements—
a bucketful—and felicity reigned
ew cypress pines are rooted in the
des of the range, which is not of
s it appeared from a distance.
ıts are not more than from 700
collected some specimens of
wever, are not peculiar to this

direction we now went, and
small dry watercourse, whose
gum-trees. When there is
el, its flow is to the west.
her, in which, after following
found a small pool of water,
lain there for many months,
and drying up fast. It was
had not fallen here.
the windings of the creeks, we
oints of the compass, but our
little west of north-west. The
ugh, and when we camped we
what shade the creek timber
e of the small vetch, or pea-like
horses are so fond, existed here.
single quandong tree (*Fusanus*;
l woods, but not of commerce) in
he fruit not yet ripe. I also saw a
acacia, whose leaves hung in small
; giving it an elegant and pendulous
his tree grows to a height of fifty
were over a foot through in the

day were exceedingly troublesome:
f increasing temperature. We saw
ut being continually hunted by the
were too shy to allow us to get within
Some emu steaks would come in
ow. Near our pool of slime a so-called
e tree (*Capparis*), of a very poor and
it, grew; and we allowed it to keep on

s informed me, in the night, that I was

of the hills, I found
rnt all the vegetation
tones, of which it was
t was a long distance
, but the incline was
ses, if it continued so,
over the mountains at
the top of the slope, I
on that score, for we
hich we were steering,
by a yawning chasm,
heer precipice, at our
yond, near the crown,
l of rock, fifty or sixty
of which the summit
able, except, perhaps,
:hward.

had formerly been
ity force of nature,
sures and fragments,
-izontally, and was
ed into pieces or
ly placed upon one
hout mortar. The
ere large, the upper
ger than a brick, at
stance. The whole
int was grand and
ect upon the time
all at once rocking
ne mighty volcanic
the fragments I
we had ascended
by going farther

d! Robinson and I went
nd they had split into sev
e, and at night Robins
the remainder had be
rubs. The thermomete
e, and there was a wa
had a fine day's work,
he camp on the plain
the afternoon I attemp
ly overlooking the ca
mbing, and reached t
me elevation, 1300 fee
chasm, or ravine, sep
ntain chain. It would
I could—reach the su
no view, so I retu
t was considerable, as
e world go, as it
upon, and was 500
ntains appear to be
glomerate granite; very
hem, but they were sple
trong, coarse spinifex.
ell into a hideous bunch
t pricked from head to f
g off in my clothes a
nnoyance and pain f
beautiful flowers grew
and ravines; of these
ured what horses we
as warm and sultry
and I rode after th
n camp we found a
ain
we returned it was nig

CHAPTER IV

TH SEPTEMBER TO 1ST

missing horses—Find one-
st horse recovered—Annoy
est — Fine timber — Gard
Follow the creek—Dig a
Thunderstorms — Mount
andhills—Useless rain—A
uinoctial gales—Search f
Native fig-trees—Gloom
hain—Hills surrounded b
Difficult watering-plac
View from a hill—Rene
nall supply—Almost un
x on the horses — Pac
tor — Glistening micac
Waterless hill nine hu
Retreat to last res
without water—Unlucky
them—Take a wrong turn
uncomfortable camp
or—Mark a tree—T
kling rain—Flies ag
ranges—Difficult scr
h the range—No
ht rain—Determine
rees—Ants' nests—C
iar climate—Red
e south—Remarks

our camp at
he 17th Septe
look after the h

riodia approaches to with
The line of hills I previ
& along to the south of
I named them Gardiner's.
Mr. Carmichael's. The
isolated hill, the farthest
three miles away to the
probably take a bend d
Mount Solitary. This
red, the gum-trees look f
some green herbage in
water has all disappeare
s so little water at the
the horses up the creek
on their return I was
in, for our stay at these
mpulsory, and the anxi
we had, left no very
the locality in our mind
led along the creek all
ls, but without seeing any
evening we set to work to
by digging. In about
drain in, but, the sand be
remove an enormous qua
drink. Some of the hors
nd had to be watered with
ply seemed good, but it
sides. Every time a hor
ut the sand for the next ;
before all were satisfie
pen, and timbered with
called in Australia.
of the same family but

f a low, bare, white granite hill, I hoped to find
ek, or at least some ledges in the rocks, where
ight get some water. Not a drop was to be
Though we had been travelling in the rain
and accomplished thirty miles, we were
to camp without water at last. There was
ed for the horses, and, as it was still raining,
uld not be very, and greatly in want of water.
up our tent for the night, the
ing it furiously as retired reasonably be ex-
was the eve vernal equinox,
supposed was the night of the equinoctial
we were compelled to be morning to re-
mp, as we had our share of the water, and
cended in sheets of the drop could not
all pure red sand. country near us
dges to catch water, The hill made off
ountains for which, so we were steering
ir nearest or most eastern point
han four miles away, we and we went
lked on ahead of the horses with
small fully I saw the glasses,
pts growing with horses. I walked
rocky ledges, in it. which at
all leaping torrents down the Very
rain had fallen roar. reservoir, but most
one small the rock here; but with
or all in any other There was
below horses. basin, and
-looking places, but all were
s one must have stood for
ain not having affected it in
r which I found the
r horses to reach

ding this opportune
ıpply, I climbed to
the top was a native
fruit was ripe and
an ordinary marble,
dually becoming red,
ll seeds. I was dis-
ıg the horses, several
; away in the wrong
ıd before I had time
al glance I obtained
desolate view imagin-
ınt the explorer from
:h a dreadful region.
now long outrun the
hich had turned up
ıorth-westward; be-
umbled and broken
e one, however, was
hich ran up to the
Northward the view
icture was the same,
e loomed above the
rthest away in that
niles distant. The
l gloomy—I could
ost extensive water
l not existing at all
:d from.
difficult and tedious
not approach the
carried up to them
ıe they were all
from the rocky

es would have emptied all the

his water was worse, rougher, Practicable than at the camp; t delighted to have found it, ave had to retreat to the last however, not to touch it now, serve fund, should I be unable est. Returning to camp, we the water remaining, and left

line of hills on our right, and -north-west. Close to the foot try is open, but covered with the interstices of which grow hideous spinifex, which both dread like a pestilence. We s scourge for over 200 miles. ets of most of the horses, in being so continually punctured s terrible grass, it has caused a nlargement of the flesh and e appearance of having ring- n have the flesh quite raw and also very tender-footed from ony ground, as we have lately rdering upon the open stony nentioned is a bed of scrubs, alga, though there are various d plants amongst it. It is so in it we cannot see a third of they, of course, continually to it to avoid the stones and speaking, the pungent triodia

nd th
hember
n the s
lso the
ccasion
hen
he open
rain;
e comp
ering
ks in
dles,
en we
the s
first
urred.
y throu
can, y
w many
o missin
ns of loads
e course of
e found, repacked, and o
the open, though ro
ound, where at least we
ese scrubs are really dre
thes get torn and ripped
these mishaps occurred
n these scrubs are met
s conditor). They for
sticks to the height
nce being fifteen to twe
ths up to three feet
eter.

mulga acacia appea
s of the vegetable ki
rubs is generally soft
horses seek it. Out
lly allowed them to
direct course sl
until some dire
r, the scrubs being
elled to crash throu
of their loads, a
between their bac
ometimes staking
hear a frantic crash
unds of the pound
notice we receive
So soon as we
gh, and collect th
elling and howling
each may have
Then they h
ds are picked up
of an hour or
repacked, and o
the open, though ro
where at least we
are really dre
torn and ripped
mishaps occurred
scrubs are met
). They for
to the height
fifteen to twe
to three feet
Inside are cha

in the ground underneath their citadel. They are tunnels, which are carried to some distance from their citadel. They occur in many parts of Australia, and are occasionally met with on plains where few trees can be found. As a general rule, they frequent the country inhabited by the black oak (casuarina). They can live without water, but, at times, build so near a water-course as to have their structures swept away by floods. Their flesh is very good eating.

In ten miles we had passed several little gullies, and reached the foot of other hills, where a few Australian pines were scattered here and there. These hills have a glistening, sheening, laminated appearance, caused by the vast quantities of mica which abounds in them. Their sides are furrowed and corrugated, and their upper portions almost bare rock. Time was lost here in unsuccessful searches for water, and we departed to another range, four or five miles farther on, and apparently higher; therefore perhaps more likely to supply us with water. Mr. Carmichael and I ascended the range, and found it to be 900 feet from its base; but in all its gullies water there was none. The view from the summit was just such as I have described before — an ocean of scrubs, with isolated hills or ranges appearing like islands in most directions. Our horses had been already twenty-four hours without water. I wanted to reach the far range to the west, but it was useless to push all the pack-horses farther into such an ocean of scrubs, as our rate of progress in them was so terribly slow. I decided to return to the small supply I had left as a reserve, and go myself to the far range, which was yet some thirty miles away. The country southward seemed

been more recently visit
on our line of march, w
be wondered at, as what
out of such a region
probably forty or fifty m
tops of some low ric
smoke of spinifex fire
natives; and in the n
they had some watering
we travelled round the n
on whose south side w
finding some place havi
m a depot for a few d
none, and had to enca
ves or our horses.
llowing day seemed fore
t really appeared as
vrong by a natural law.
king a hobble peg, wh
were away after the ho
od slipped out of my ha
of the knife went through
hird finger and stuck in the
cut bled profusely, and it to
to sew my mutilated dig
we left this waterless sp
with a prepossessing gorg
Robinson to bring the ho
if I could find water the
alked in gullies and gor
nd. I then made down
have passed along, and
ng with their packs on, i
surrounded by dens
,

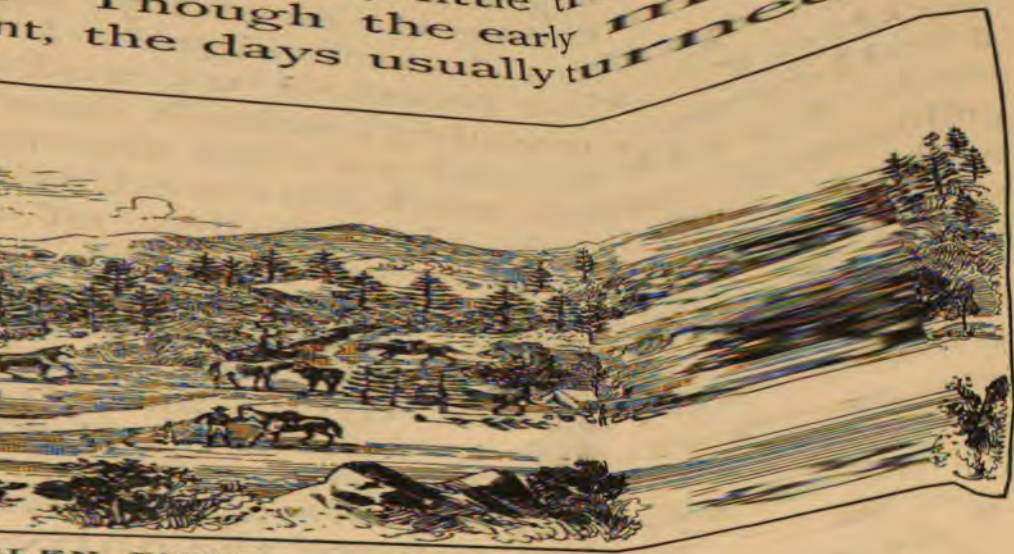
hance I came to, nd nobody near. I call
aited, and at last Mr. Carmichael came ar
that when he and Robinson debouched wi
ses on this little o en space, they found th
he animals were n issing, and that Robinso
to pick up thei r tracks. The horse ca
apers and instru ments was one of the tr
nson soon return d, not having found the
ner of them co ld tell when they saw
es last. I sent M r. Carmichael to anothe
or three miles av ay, that we had passed,
inspected yesterd y, to search for water, w
inson and I looke for the missing horses.
any more should r treat during our absence,
l them up in two r obs. Robinson tied his
near a small rock. We then separately m
eeps round, returnir g to the horses on the
site side, without su cess. We then went ag
company, and again on opposite sides singly, b
either tracks nor ho es could be found. Fi
ours had now elapse since I first heard of the
bsence. I determine to make one more circu
beyond any we had al ady taken, so as to includ
the spot we had campe at; this occupied a coupl
of hours. When I retu ed I was surprised to hea
that Robinson had fou the horses in a small but
extra dense bunch of s ub not twenty yards from
the spot where he had t d his horses up. While I
was away he had gone on top of the little stony
eminence close by, and from its summit had ob-
tained a bird's-eye view of the ground below, and
thus perceived the two animals, which had never
been absent at all. It med strange to me that I
could not find their ks, but the reason was

get levers and roll away huge boulders, to
thing like a track to enable the animals
e water.
nd labour) accomplishes all things, and
last animal's thirst was quenched, and
p of water sucked up from every basin.
l it would not be replenished by morn-
d to encamp in the midst of a thicket of
llow acacia with pink bark all in little
a small and pretty mimosa-like leaf.
of the most tenacious nature—you may
break it won't. We had to cut away
make an open square, large enough for
nd to enable us to lie down, also to
ge bunches of spinifex that occupied
hen, when the stones were cleared
something like a place for a camp.
it was midnight, and we slept, all
f our day's work, and the night being
sleep in comfort. Our first thought
was to see how the basins looked.
went up with a keg to discover, and
eported that they had all been re-
t, and that the trickling continued,
e. This was a great relief to my
e water will remain until I return
l-looking mountains to the west. I
arch during the morning for more
t success, and I can only conclude
was permitted by Providence to
his lonely spot for my especial
e rain had fallen here than at any
in the neighbourhood, nor is this
different from the others which I

name suits best. The above are
me thing, of tribes of natives, o
he Continent—as *Lubra*, *Gin*, *N*
oman. No doubt these natives ca
y or other animals' skins dur
unts, for they travel great distan
king and burning, and picking u
e or roasted as they go, and b
the general camp at night. We
hree different lines of conflagrations
h I could catch a native, or a doze
it would be better to die or con
battle for water, than be for ever f
ul scrubs and getting none. The
g the poor horses looked wretched
o remain long in such a region w
ry severe upon them; it is a w
e to carry us so well. From this
pot bore north 40° east. The
austed that, though we started
s late in the afternoon when we
the twenty-nine or thirty miles
last to the tarn. Altogether
20 miles without a drink. The day was
evidently shrunk. The day was
92° in shadiest place at the de
e fatigue of the last few days
sary before we made a fresh attemp
lity.

y a day's rest—for I, at least, have
it is a respite, and we can drink
And oh! what a pleasure, what a
How few in civilisation will drink
an get anything else. Let them

bright gleams of the morning,
f dawning, it was beautiful to
; everything seemed in minia-
, little glen, little trees, little
. Though the early mornings
nt, the days usually turned out



LEN EDITH.

On the 11th Mr. Carmichael
es, and I determined to try
the south, and leaving Alec
e dog Monkey again in charge
d tarn, away we went in that
travelled over sandhills, tim-
suarina decaisneana, or desert
me eucalyptus-trees growing
tops of the sandhills, as well
t twelve miles we rode over
try in advance appeared no
hat already travelled. De-
ground, however, we entered

leaving the Finke, and which
uch an enormous extent of
s fed all night close at hand,
ddles early enough. I wanted
urther west the better; but we
creek and see what it. We
re waters existed in of open
ered through a piece upon.
ed, and delightful to gaze other
colour of green! What which
ature have chosen with indeed,
of the earth? How, the eye!
or yellow pall upon of all
green, is the loveliest good
soil of this plain was annel,
had now worn a deep channel we
from where we camp with a
of a high red bank, was
hole underneath. There for a
for 100 or 200 horses low.
enty more in the sand and I
vere met lower down, We
vays be got by digging. and
r a mile or two farther, arina
ecame exhausted, as casu and
environed the little plain, little
of scarcely ten miles, the vour-
ved up by those water-de
vas named Laurie's Creek.
5000 to 10,000 acres of fine
tle plain, and it was such a
le, triodia, and sandy country
not resist calling it the Vale
ft the exhausted creek, and

us scrutiny through the smoke
a little to the west of south, I
ne of a range of hills, and right
ne fire an exceedingly high an
ountain loomed. To the south
anges appeared; they seemed
d south.
tain was very remote; it must
or seventy-five miles away, wi
ly between but a country simi
ely before and behind us; that
and scrub. I was, however, d
ve any feature for which to mak
nt, and which might help to ove
d monotony of the country ough
een wandering so long. I the course
e that some extensive ranges which
om these new ranges which present,
away to the west. For the little glen,
to get water at this little with a
ve a supply can be obtained Glen
ed to return to the tarn at remove
s now fifty-five miles away, remove
e newly-found creek at the Vale of
n return here, open out this water-
shovel, and make a straight line for
ered high mountain to the south.
e conclusions had been arrived at,
gs about the rocks completed, it
y; and as we had thirty-five miles
ck to the creek, it took us all the
day to do so; and it was late
camped upon its friendly banks.
to-day had stood at 96°. We

now had our former tracks to return upon to the tarn. The morning was cool and pleasant, and we arrived at the depot early. Alec Robinson informed me that he believed some natives had been prowling about the camp in our absence, as the little dog had been greatly perturbed during two of the nights we were away. It was very possible that some natives had come to the tarn for water, as well as to spy out who and what and how many vile and wicked intruders had found their way into this secluded spot; but as they must have walked about on the rocks they left no traces of their visit.

Oct. 15th.—This morning's meal was to be the last we should make at our friendly little tarn, whose opportune waters, ripe figs, miniature mountains, and imitation fortresses, will long linger in my recollection. Opposite the rocks in which the water lies, and opposite the camp also, is a series of small fort-like, stony eminences, standing apart; these form one side of the glen; the other is formed by the rocks at the base of the main ridge, where the camp and water are situated. This really was a most delightful little spot, though it certainly had one great nuisance, which is almost inseparable from pine-trees, namely ants. These horrid pests used to crawl into and over everything and everybody, by night as well as by day. The horses took their last drink at the little sweet-watered tarn, and we moved away for our new home to the south.

APTER VI.

1872, TO 31ST JANUARY, 1873.

eek—Revisit the pass—Horn ornamented caves—Map study salt lake—A barrier—Brine pools hausted horses—Follow the lake d—Mount Olga—Sleepless animals nal Gallery—Signal for native The westward—Mount Unapproachable increasing—Sufferings and deep section Pass—Glen Thirsty—Food all gone tion—Horse staked—Pleasure of a ard—Better regions—A fine creek King's Creek—Carmichael's creek s Creek—A swim—Bagot's creek ge—Trickett's Creek—George Gill's eek—Return—Two natives—A host up the depot—Improvement in the resolve—Levi's Range—Follow the len—Up a tree—Rapid retreat eek—Fall over a bank—Middleton's Friendly natives—Rogers's Pass nced-in water-hole—Briscoe's Pass e pillar—Remarks on the Finke ne—Native boys—I buy one—The nel Warburton—Arrive at the Peake Adelaide.

y when we left Glen Edith, much later by the time we rses at the end of our twenty- s then too dark to reach the

lower or best water-holes. To-day there was an uncommon reversal of the usual order in the weather —the early part of the day being hot and sultry, but towards evening the sky became overcast and cloudy, and the evening set in cold and windy. Next morning we found that one horse had staked himself in the coronet very severely, and that he was quite lame. I got some mulga wood out of the wound, but am afraid there is much still remaining. This wood, used by the natives for spear-heads, contains a virulent poisonous property, and a spear or stake wound with it is very dangerous. The little mare that foaled at Mount Udor, and was such an object of commiseration, has picked up wonderfully, and is now in good working condition. I have another mare, Marzetti, soon to foal; but as she is fat, I do not anticipate having to destroy her progeny. We did not move the camp to-day. Numbers of bronze-winged pigeons came to drink, and we shot several of them. The following day Mr. Carmichael and I again mounted our horses, taking with us a week's supply of rations, and started off intending to visit the high mountain seen at our last farthest point. We left Alec Robinson again in charge of the camp, as he had now got quite used to it, and said he liked it. He always had my little dog Monkey for a companion. When travelling through the spinifex we carried the little animal. He is an excellent watchdog, and a bird can come near the camp without his ing warning. Alec had plenty of firearms and munition to defend himself with, in case of an k from the natives. This, however, I did not ipate; indeed, I wished they would come (in a

ructed Alec to endeavour
em until my return if they
ach. Alec was a very
e and sometimes uncivil,
d our travels so different
as, as he thought he was
he often grumbled and
o back again. However,
h nothing whatever to do
ly suited him, and I felt
him by himself. I would
nain if I were in any way

a slightly different route,
ere other ridges that
ind another and a better
at the pass. It is in
ange region that they
ater, as in the sandy beds
ween them, water would
assed through some very
mostly dead, ripped our
in, as we had continually
ghs and branches aside to
d a hill in twenty miles,
at no favourable signs of
or it was merely a pile of
nding up above the scrubs
desolate in the extreme;
miles, but we pushed on
ill, to the south-east, and
ual scrub, we reached its
camped. In the morning
o water could be seen or

procured. This hill was rugged with broken granite boulders, scrubby with mulga and bushes, and covered with triodia to its summit. To the south a vague and strange horizon was visible; it appeared flat, as though a plain of great extent existed there, but as the mirage played upon it, I could not make anything of it. My old friend the high mountain loomed large and abrupt at a great distance off, and it bore 8° 30′ west from here, too great a distance for us to proceed to it at once, without first getting water for our horses, as it was possible that no water might exist even in the neighbourhood of such a considerable mountain. The horses rambled n the night; when they were found we started way for the little pass and glen where we knew vater was to be got, and which was now some irty miles away to the west-north-west. We ached it somewhat late. The day was hot, ther-ometer 98° in shade, and the horses very thirsty, t they could get no water until we had dug a ce for them. Although we had reached our nping ground our day's work was only about to mence. We were not long in obtaining enough er for ourselves, such as it was—thick and dirty a nauseous flavour—but first we had to tie the es up, to prevent them jumping in on us. We l to our grief that but a poor supply was to be ted, and though we had not to dig very deep, had to remove an enormous quantity of sand, o create a sufficient surface to get water to and had to dig a tank twenty feet long by six ep, and six feet wide at the bottom, though p it was much wider. I may remark—and ow say applies to almost every other water

in all my wanderings that
ed to dig, a swarm of large
immediately came around us,
g, diamond birds (*Amadina*)
twitter near, and when water
in great numbers. With
though they swarmed round
in clouds, no one was ever
and instinct informing them
nds. We worked and waited
one of our three horses could
water came so slowly that
night before the last animal's
s by the time the third not a
ady to begin again, and they
ough the night. We rested
y to allow them to fill them-
o doubt they will require all
get to sustain them in their
the distant mountain. We
rging the tank, and were lad
no increase in the supply of
still there seemed no diminu-
ould fill himself at one spell.
to the rocks and gullies of
roglodytes' cave ornamented
mens of aboriginal art. The
s were the principal objects,
es for shields were also con-
glyph was most striking; it
han numerals—a V and an I,
representing the figure VI;
ed over with spots, and were
re. Several large rock-holes

were seen, but they had all long lain dry. A few cypress pines grew upon the rocks in several places. The day was decidedly hot; the thermometer stood at 100° in the shade at three o'clock, and we had to fix up a cloth for an awning to get sufficient shade to sit under. Our only intellectual occupation was the study of a small map of Australia, showing the routes of the Australian explorers. How often we noted the facility with which other and more fortunate travellers dropped upon fine creeks and large rivers. We could only envy them their good fortune, and hope the future had some prizes in store for us also. The next morning, after taking three hours to water our horses, we started on the bearing of the high mount, which could not be seen from he low ground, the bearing being south 18° west. Ve got clear of the low hills of the glen, and most immediately entered thick scrubs, varied by gh sandhills, with casuarina and triodia on them. twelve miles I noticed the sandhills became uded of timber, and on our right a small and aren tly grassy plain was visible; I took these s as a favourable indication of a change of try. At three miles farther we had a white hannel right in front of us, with some sheets of in it; upon approaching I found it a perfect d the water brine itself. We went round this to the left, and at length found a place firm to cross. We continued upon our course, ascending a high sandhill I found we had r right hand, and stretching away to the enormous salt expanse, and it appeared as l hit exactly upon the eastern edge of it, at e rejoiced greatly for a time. Continuing

LT EXPANSE.

reeless sandhills for a mile or
l not escaped this feature quite
s now right in our road; it
o be bounded by sandhills a
ft, eastwards; so we went in
each succeeding mile; we saw
s objectionable feature; it con-
rther and farther to the east
l about fifteen miles, and had i
ht, it swept round under som
hid it from us, till it lay eas
rt our path. It was most pe
e thus confronted by such h a
d a distance on its surface, ar
ed firm enough, but the sta
hey almost disappeared— T
encrusted with salt, but br
step the horses took— in
a sandhill, but only obtain

was apparently six or seve
hether what we took for its
islands or the main, I could
e saw several sandhill islands,
deeply red, to which the mirage
ir floating in an ocean of water.
shore eastwards were several
to these we went and dug
t more brine. We could see
way east or east-south-east as
ld carry the vision. Here we
t to cross, but the horses were
in the bottomless bed of this
ve could look round. I made

sure they would be swallowed up before our eyes. We were powerless to help them, for we could not get near owing to the bog, and we sank up over our knees, where the crust was broken, in hot salt mud. All I could do was to crack my whip to prevent the horses from ceasing to exert themselves, and although it was but a few moments that they were in this danger, to me it seemed an eternity. They staggered at last out of the quagmire, heads, backs, saddles, everything covered with blue mud, their mouths were filled with salt mud also, and they were completely exhausted when they reached firm ground. We let them rest in the hade of some quandong trees, which grew in reat numbers round about here. From Mount dor to the shores of this lake the country had en continually falling. The northern base of ch ridge, as we travelled, seemed higher by many t than the southern, and I had hoped to come n something better than this. I thought such a tinued fall of country might lead to a consider- watercourse or freshwater basin; but this salt was dreadful, the more especially as it pre- d me reaching the mountain which appeared iting beyond.

seeing any possibility of pushing south, and g after all it might not be so far round the the west, I turned to where we had struck salt channel, and resolved to try what a sterly line would produce. The channel in was now some fifteen miles away to the stward, and by the time we got back there as done and "the darkness had fallen from of night." We had travelled nearly fifty

almost dead; the thermometer
shade when we rested
the night blankets were
been any food for them
for thirst, and were too
toil to go out of sight
followed along the course
west for seven miles, when
arm running north-eastward
until we had gone up
Then we made for
south-west and reached
There was neither water
was wandered for
looking for water, but
back on our morning's
thirty miles. From
lake could be seen stretch
west-south-west in vast
salt arms running back
Very far to the west
was too distant for me to reach
horses would have been two
and the probability was they
if they reached it. I deter-
ever, but I felt I must first return
glen to refresh the exhausted
we are, the prospect is wild
white bed of the great lake
whole southern horizon. The
consists of open sandhills,
covered with triodia; farther
and mulga scrubs.
middle of the day when I

descended from the hill. We had no alternative but to return to the only spot where we knew water was to be had; this was now distant twenty-one miles to the north-east, so we departed in a straight line for it. I was heartily annoyed at being baffled in my attempt to reach the mountain, which I now thought more than ever would offer a route out of this terrible region; but it seemed impossible to escape from it. I named this eminence Mount Olga, and the great salt feature which obstructed the Lake Amadeus, in honour of two enlightened royal patrons of science. The horses were now exceedingly weak; the bogging of yesterday had taken a great deal of strength out of them, and the heat of the last two days had contributed to weaken them (the thermometer to-day went up to 101° in the shade). They could now only travel slowly, so that it was late at night when we reached the little lake. Fifty miles over such disheartening country may has been almost too much for the poor horses. In the tank there was only sufficient water for one horse; the others had to be tied up to wait their turns to drink, and the water percolated so slowly through the sand it was nearly midnight before they were all satisfied and begun to feed. What wonderful creatures horses are! They can go for two and three days and go three nights without water, but they can go for ever without food. It is true they do sleep, but equally true that they can go without sleeping. If I took my choice of a station for a beast to guard and give me rest while I slept, I would select the horse, for the most sleepless creature Nature has made. It seems to know this; for if you should by

leep he seems very indignant
self.
ecessary to give our horses a
ked so much out of sorts this
of the day was spent in water-
time it was quite hot, and we
g for shade. We were over-
ered by flies, so in self-defence
into the gullies, revisited the
allery of paintings and hiero-
turned to our shade and our
d over the little German map,
re prosperous explorers. The
d at 101° in the shade and
we experienced that day was
descend. The atmosphere
ll day with smoke, and haze
d, for the Autochthones were
ting fires, especially upon the
great lake; but at night the
ept up a perpetual light. and
have been miles away they
close. I also had fallen into
try, and had set fire to several
dia, which had burned with
iant, indeed, was the illumina-
read by the light. I kindled
ne of the natives might come
no doubt in such a poorly
native population cannot be
o do inhabit it had evidently
ular portion of it until rains
e them to hunt while water

Last night, the 23rd October, was sultry, and blankets utterly useless. The flies and ants were wide awake, and the only thing we could congratulate ourselves upon, was the absence of mosquitoes. At dawn the thermometer stood at 70°, and a warm breeze blew gently from the north. The horses were found early, but as it took nearly three hours to water them we did not leave the glen till past eight o'clock. This time I intended to return to the ridges we had last left, and which now bore a little to the west of south-west, twenty-one miles away. We made a detour so as to inspect some other ridges near where we had been last. Stony and low ridgy ground was first met, but the scrubs were all around. At fifteen miles we came upon a little firm clayey plain with some salt bushes, and it also had upon it some clay pans, but they had long been dry. We found the northern face of the ridges just as waterless as the southern, which we had previously searched. The far hills or ridges to the west, which I now intended to visit, bore nearly west. Another salt bush plain was next crossed; this was nearly three miles long. We now gave the horses an hour's spell, the thermometer showing 102° in the shade; then, re-saddling, we went on, and it was nine o'clock at night when we found ourselves under the shadows of the hills we had steered having them on the north of us.

searched in the dark, but could find no feature ly to supply us with water; we had to encamp a nest of triodia without any water, having lled forty-eight miles through the usual kind of ry that occupies this region's space. At day-the thermometer registered 70°, that being the

uring the night. On ascendin
, there was but one feature to ga
: still stretching away, not on
d, but evidently increasing size
and north-west. Several lateral
own out from the parent bed a
, some broad and some narrow.
ith one hill much more prominent
n about this country, appeared cl
shores of the lake; it bore from t
on south 68° west, and was about
A long broad salt arm, howev
back of it between it and me,
there appeared a narrow place
e might cross to reach it.
ge I was red granite, bu
creek nor rock-hole about it.
the high hill westward, crossing
annel with great difficulty, at five
we came to the arm. It ap
ortunately one of the horses got
and it was only by the most
t we at length got him out.
ed dreadful feature, if it has a b
in entirely of hot, blue, briny
ty; extricating the horse ma
to the hill looked more invitin
it, so, still hoping to reach
arm for about seven miles in a north
It proved, however, quite impass-
med utterly useless to attempt to
, as we could not tell how far we
avel before we could get round the
it continues in a semicircle and

joins the lake again, thus isolating the hill I wished to visit. This now seemed an island it was impossible to reach. We were sixty-five miles away from the only water we knew of, with no likelihood of any nearer; there might certainly be water at the mount I wished to reach, but it was unapproachable, and I called it by that name; no doubt, had I been able to reach it, my progress would still have been impeded to the west by the huge lake itself. I could get no water except brine upon its shores, and I had no appliances to distil that; could I have done so, I would have followed this feature, hideous as it is, as no doubt sooner or later some watercourses must fall into it either from the south or the west. We were, however, a hundred miles from the camp, with only one man left there, and sixty-five from the nearest water. I had no choice but to retreat, baffled, like Eyre with his Lake Torrens in 1840, at all points. On the southern shore of the lake, and apparently a very long way off, a range of hills bore south 30° west; this range had a pinkish appearance and seemed of some length. Mr. Carmichael wished me to call it McNicol's Range, after a friend of his, and this I did. We turned our wretched horses' heads once more in the direction of our little tank, and had good reason perhaps to thank our stars that we got away safe from the lone unhallowed shore of this vicious sea. We kept on twenty-eight miles before we camped, and looked at two or three times, on the way ineffectually, for some signs of having gone forty-seven miles; thermometer in 103°, the heat increasing one degree a day for days. When we camped we were hungry,

ed, covered all over with dry salt
not to be wondered at if our sp
very high point, especially as
d forced retreat. The night
d sultry, and rain clouds gather
about 1 A.M. the distant rum
were heard to the west-north-wes
pes some rain might fall, as it w
oaching; the thunder was not l
ing was most extraordinarily vivi
ps of rain fell, and the rest of th
closer and more sultry than before
e stars had left the sky we were
gain; the horses looked most
eir flanks drawn in, the natural ve
to an open and extraordinary
hollow and sunken, which is alwa
orses when greatly in want of
f such stages will thoroughly te
that ever stepped. We had thi
ravel to reach the water. The
d, it was late in the afternoon
awled into the little glen; the las
er stones made the pace more
r knowledge of the near presen
to inspirit them in the least;
w they would have to wait for hou
en they arrived, before their cravin
be appeased. The thermometer
in the shade. When we arrived
walked 131 miles without a drink,
nder that the poor creatures were
en one horse had drank what little
we had to re-dig the tank, for the

wind or some other cause had knocked a vast amount of the sand into it again. Some natives also had visited the place while we were away, their fresh tracks were visible in the sand around, and on the top of the tank. They must have stared to see such a piece of excavation in their territory. When the horses did get water, two of them rolled, and groaned, and kicked, so that I thought they were going to die; one was a mare, she seemed the worst, another was a strong young horse which had carried me well, the third was my old favourite riding-horse; this time he had only carried the pack, and was badly bogged; he was the only one that did not appear distressed when filled with water, the other two lay about in evident pain until morning. About the middle of the night thunder was again heard, and flash after flash of even more vivid lightnings than that of the previous night enlightened the glen; so bright were the flashes, being alternately fork and sheet lightning, that for nearly an hour the glare never ceased. The thunder was much louder than last night's, and a slight mizzling rain for about an hour fell. The barometer had fallen considerably for the last two days, so I anticipated a change. The rain was too light to be of any use; the temperature of the atmosphere, however, was quite changed, for by the morning the thermometer was down to 48°.

The horses were not fit to travel, so we had to stay, with nothing to do, but consult the little again, and lay off my position on it. My first point I found to be in latitude 24° 38′ and made 130°. For the second time I had reached the same meridian. I had been repulsed at

s, which were about a hundred r
e first instance by dry stony range
f dense scrubs, and in the second
ke equally destitute of fresh water
ne plain enough that a much
else more southerly course mu
ach the western coast, at all eve
y, it will be only by time and I
ny explorer can penetrate it.
fore that we entered this little
about half-a-mile long, betwee
lstone. I named this Worrill's
riend of Mr. Carmichael. Th
we dug out the tank I coul
y, for we never returned to
ur horses, were choking for
tions, although we had eked
possible economy, was cons
nly a week's supply, and w
ten days from home, an
st all to-morrow, until we rea
s the horses were unable to c
to remain.
I had a long conversation with
on our affairs in general, and our
in particular; the conclusion we
having been nearly three months
ogressed so far in the time as we
e had found the country so dry
it seemed scarcely probable that
o penetrate farther to the west,
emain in depot for a month or
ry by some means to economise
nly way to do so was to dispense

with the services of Alec Robinson. It would be necessary, of course, in the first place, to find a creek to the eastward, which would take him to the Finke, and by the means of the same watercourse we might eventually get round to the southern shores of Lake Amadeus, and reach Mount Olga at last.

In our journey up the Finke two or three creeks had joined from the west, and as we were now beyond the sources of any of these, it would be necessary to discover some road to one or the other before Robinson could be parted with. By dispensing with his services, as he was willing to go, we should have sufficient provisions left to enable us to hold out for some months longer: even if we had to wait so long as the usual rainy season in this part of the country, which is about January and February, we should still have several months' provisions to start again with. In all these considerations Mr. Carmichael fully agreed, and it was decided that I should inform Alec of our resolution so soon as we returned to the camp. After the usual nearly three hours' work to water our horses, we turned our backs for the last time upon Glen Thirsty, where we had so often returned with exhausted and broking horses.

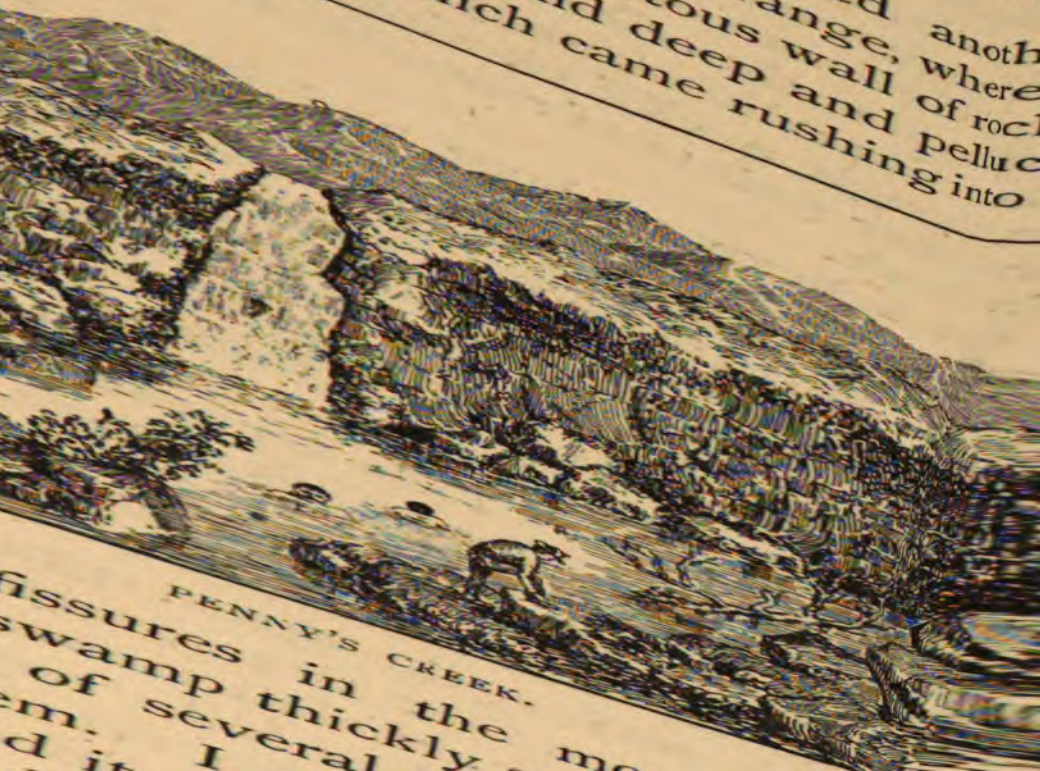
I must admit that I was getting anxious about Robinson and the state of things at the camp. In ing through Worrill's Pass, we noticed that scarcely we had escaped from being struck by the light-; branches and boughs lay scattered about, and al pines from the summits of the ridges had blasted from their eminence. I was not very surprised, for I expected to be lightning-struck as I scarcely ever saw such lightning before.

to Robinson and the camp at 5
that carried the pack had gone
is caused us to travel very slow
s alive and quite well, and the lit
oyed to greet us. Robinson report
ad been frequently in the neighbou
lit fires close to the camp, but wou
elves. Marzetti's mare had foaled
ng a daughter; the horse that was
rse, and I found my old horse had
ga stake into his coronet. I probed
both, but could not get any wood out.
I both thought we would like a
if I did not do much work, at least
d deal.

rses are worse: the poisonous mulga
wounds, but I can't get it out. What
not only to have plenty of water to
ly to have sufficient for a bath! I
f my views regarding him, but said
ain until some eastern waters could
the 30th October, Mr. Carmichael
ee fresh horses, started again. In
therly I had noticed a conspicuous
elevation quite distinct from the
n our camp was fixed, and lying
here an almost overhanging crag
h-western face. This range I now
To get out of the ridges in which
s, we had to follow the trend of a
y what are sometimes called reap-
ran about east-south-east. In a
ossed an insignificant little creek
rees; it had a small pool of water

in its bed: the valley was well grassed and open, and the triodia was also absent. A small pass ushered us into a new valley, in which were several peculiar conical hills. Passing over a saddle-like pass, between two of them, we came to a flat, open valley running all the way to the foot of the new range, with a creek channel between. The range appeared very red and rocky, being composed of enormous masses of red sandstone; the upper portion of it was bare, with the exception of a few cypress pines, moored in the rifled rock, and, I suppose, proof to the tempest's shock. A fine-looking creek, lined with gum-trees, issued from a gorge. We followed up the channel, and Mr. Carmichael found a fine little sheet of water in a stony hole, about 400 yards long and forty yards wide. This had about four feet of water in it; the grass was green, and all round the foot of the range the country was open, beautifully grassed, green, and delightful to look at. Having found so eligible a spot, we encamped: how different from our former line of march! We strolled up through the rocky gorge, and found several rock reservoirs with plenty of water; some palm-like Zamias were seen along the rocks. Down the channel, about south-west, the creek passed through a kind of low gorge about three miles away. Smoke was seen there, and no doubt it was an encampment of the natives. Since the heavy though dry thunderstorm at Glen Thirsty, the temperature has been much cooler. I called this King's Creek. Another on the western flat beyond joins it. I called the north-west point of this range Carmichael's Crag. The range trended a little south of east, and we decided to follow along its southern face, which

grassy, and beautifully green;
ost agreeable and pleasant country
ut five miles we crossed anoth
mediately out of the range, where
r a high and precipitous wall of rock
ch was a splendid deep and pellu
est water, which came rushing into



PENNY'S CREEK.

fissures in the mountain: it the
swamp thickly set with reeds, which
of several acres, having plenty of
em. I called this Penny's Creek.
d it was a similar one and reed bed,
did rock reservoir. Farther along
hannels issued too, with fine rock
eighteen miles we reached a much

larger one than we had yet seen: I hoped this might reach the Finke. We followed it into the range, where it came down through a glen: here we found three fine rock-holes with good supplies of water in them. The glen and rock is all red sandstone: the place reminded me somewhat of Captain Sturt's Depot Glen in the Grey ranges of his Central Australian Expedition, only the rock formation is different, though a cliff overhangs both places, and there are other points of resemblance. I named this Stokes's Creek.

We rested here an hour and had a swim in one of the rocky basins. How different to regions westward, where we could not get enough water to drink, let alone to swim in! The water ran down through the glen as far as the rock-holes, where it sank into the ground. Thermometer 102° to-day. We continued along the range, having a fine stretch of open grassy country to travel upon, and in five miles reached another creek, whose reed beds and water filled the whole glen. This I named Bagot's Creek. For some miles no other creek issued, till, approaching the eastern end of the range, we had a piece of broken stony ground and some mulga for a few miles, when we came to a sudden fall into a lower valley, which was again open, grassy, and green. We could then see that the range ended, but sent out one more creek, which meandered down the valley towards some other hills beyond; this valley was of a clayey soil, and the creek had some clay holes with water in them. Following it three miles farther, we found that it emptied itself into a much larger stony mountain stream; I named this Trickett's Creek, after a friend of Mr. Carmichael's. The

ch had thrown out so many cre
so much water, and which is o
ngth, I named George Gill's Ra
r-in-law. The country round it
best I have seen in this region; a
sported to any civilised land, its
ges, ferns, Zamias, and flowers
eyes and hearts of toil-worn men
d to live and die in crowded towns
w creek now just discovered had
er-hole immediately above and bel
f Trickett's Creek, and as we appr
one, I noticed several native wurle
their owners having seen us wh
ht of them, had fled at our app
heir valuables behind. These con
pears, drinking vessels,
other shields, and all the usual appliances
l aboriginal gentlemen's establishm
native dog-puppies came out, how
, but when we dismounted and
being used to such refined odour
probably exhaled, they fled how
d left some food cooking, and
answered, but would not come
s of some size; it seemed to
in a new range further eastward
he north-west, apparently draining
le of Gill's Range. I called it
ek. We were now sixty-five miles
and had been most successful in
a route to allow of the departure
appeared that this creek would
inke, though we afterwards found

it did not. I intended upon returning here to endeavour to discover a line of country round the south-eastern extremity of Lake Amadeus, so as to reach Mount Olga at last. We now turned our horses' heads again for our home camp, and continued travelling until we reached Stokes's Creek, where we encamped after a good long day's march.

This morning, as we were approaching Penny's Creek, we saw two natives looking most intently at our outgoing horse tracks, along which they were slowly walking, with their backs towards us. They neither saw nor heard us until we were close upon their heels. Each carried two enormously long spears, two-thirds mulga wood and one-third reed at the throwing end, of course having the instrument with which they project these spears, called by some tribes of natives only, but indiscriminately all over the country by whites, a wommerah. It is in the form of a flat ellipse, elongated to a sort of tail at the holding end, and short-pointed at the projecting end; a kangaroo's claw or wild dog's tooth is firmly fixed by gum and gut-strings. The projectile force of this implement is enormous, and these spears can be thrown with the greatest precision for more than a hundred yards. They also had narrow shields, three to four feet long, to protect themselves from hostile spears, with a handle cut out in the centre. These two natives had their hair tied up in a kind of chignon at the back of the head, the hair being dragged back off the forehead from infancy. This mode gave them a wild though somewhat effeminate appearance; others again, wear their hair in long thick curls reach

n the shoulders, beautifully elabo
or emus' fat and red ochre. Th
the men; the women's hair is w
flints or bitten off short. So soon
heard, and then looking round sa
ed off like emus, running along a
und as it is possible for any tw
to do. One was quite a young fa
ll grown. They ran up the sid
I kept travelling along parallel to
we stopped and called, and signal
they would not come close, and the
o come near them on foot, the fas
hey continued alongside us until
s reached, where we rested the ho
We soon became aware that a
d were in our vicinity, our orig
d shouting to inform the others
g presently we saw a whole na
I from the glen or gorge to the
I had noticed camp-fires on m
The new people were also sh
in the most furious and dem
the former two, as though de
our approached us much nearer
now within twenty yards of us,
ame that they could use their wommera
spears fixed in their instant
The slightest incident might have
o spear us, but we appeared to be
endeavoured to parley with them.
not handsome or fat, but were very
s is the case with most of the natives
were rather tall, viz. five feet eight

nine inches. When they had come close
h, the elder began to harangue us, and evi-
y desired us to know that we were trespassers,
ere to be off forthwith, as he waved us away
e direction we had come from. The whole
hen took up the signal, howled, yelled, and
l their hands and weapons at us. Fortunately,
er, they did not actually attack us; we were
ery well prepared for attack, as we had
revolver each, our guns and rifles being left
Robinson. As our horses were frightened and
not feed, we hurried our departure, when
re saluted with rounds of cheers and blessings,
ls and curses in their charming dialect, until
re fairly out of sight and hearing. On reach-
e camp, Alec reported that no natives had
een during our absence. On inspecting the
ne horses, it appeared they were worse than

had a very sudden dry thunderstorm, which
the air. Next day I sent Alec and Carmichael
the first little five-mile creek eastwards with
o lame horses, so that we can pick them up
e to-morrow. They reported that the horses
carcely travel at all; I thought if I could get
Penny's Creek I would leave them there.
ttle depot camp was at length broken up,
had existed here from 15th October to 5th
ber. I never expected, after being nearly
onths out, that I should be pushing to the
ls, when every hope and wish I had was
exactly the opposite direction, and I could
sole myself with the thought that I was
the east to get to the west at last. I

at hopes that if I can once set
Olga, my route to the west
I had not seen all the horses
ne, and when they had all were m
I found they had greatly
and almost the fattest among
s mare that had foaled at Mo
mare looked very well also.
past midday when we turned
mpe's Vale. At the five-mile
wo lame horses, and reached King
t late in the afternoon. As
several natives' smokes, we m
le region seemed alive and imm
men, and children running with ab
points of the mountain down
here they to join th
shrieking, all congregated. The
y the least, annoying, they k
g the horses, they crowded when we
ng their knotted sticks, long closer
among implements. I did not spear
d for any. I did not notice
and them, and They were growing
a mob evidently meant mischief
o of them and cracked my
en effect in dispersing them. w
pause, and then gave a sudd
It seemed as if they knew, or had
ng, of white men's ways, for when
ny rifle, and holding it up, warning
my great astonishment they de-
robably wanted to find out if we
things, and I trust they were satis-

fied, for they gave us up apparently as a bad lot.

It appeared the exertion of travelling had improved the go of the lame horses, so I took them along with the others in the morning; I did not like the idea of leaving them anywhere on this range, as the natives would certainly spear, and probably eat them. We got them along to Stokes's Creek, and encamped at the swimming rock-hole.

After our frugal supper a circumstance occurred which completely put an end to my expedition. Mr. Carmichael informed me that he had made up his mind not to continue in the field any longer, for as Alec Robinson was going away, he should do so too. Of course I could not control him; he was a volunteer, and had contributed towards the expenses of the expedition. We had never fallen out, and I thought he was as ardent in the cause of exploration as I was, so that when he informed me of his resolve it came upon me as a complete surprise. My arguments were all in vain; in vain I showed how, with the stock of provisions we had, we might keep the field for months. I even offered to retreat to the Finke, so that we should not have much arduous work for want of water, but it was all useless.

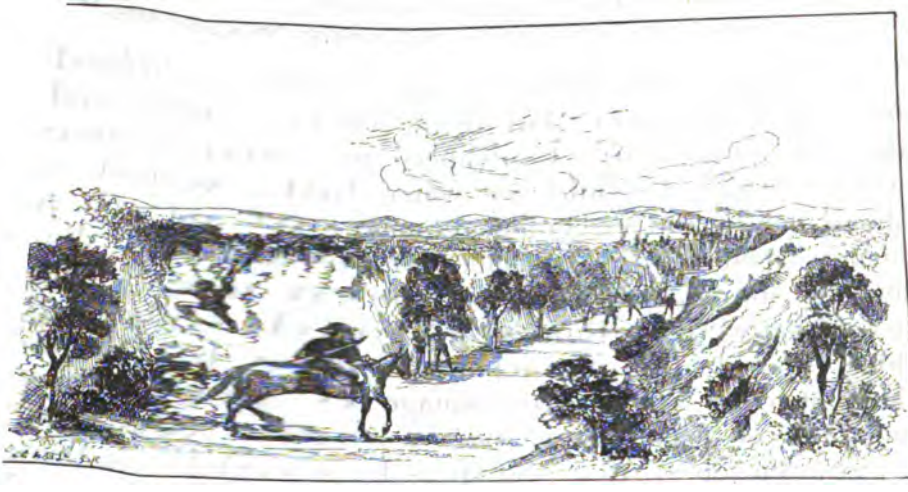
It was with distress that I lay down on my blankets that night, after what he had said. I scarcely knew what to do. I had yet a lot of horses heavily loaded with provisions; but to take them out into a waterless, desert country by myself, was impossible. We only went a short distance—to Stokes's Creek, where I renewed my arguments. Carmichael's reply was, that he had made up

and nothing should alter it; the co
so
with one companion I had, discharged
d, and another who out of the qu
er exploration was now in view but to h
ther object now in hopes of reorgan
civilisation, in full retrea
n. We were now in traversed
line; but as I still cont
y unexplored, I may as well foal
to the close. Marzetti's par
nd had to be killed at Baget's Creek
riday, the 8th November, the
ll moved under my directions. Mr. Car
er the same ground that reach
d formerly done, until we nati
in the Levi Range. The hills app
had departed. The ther
so close as to form a valley; we follow
er-holes in the creek; Wh
far as the valley existed. the
ned, the creek spread out, and the
pear in its bed. We kept mov
s evening I saw some gum-trees
o or three miles southwards, a
appeared above the hills, I kne
have been there lately, and that w
there. leaving
obinson to go on with the horses
l found there was the channel of
ich narrowed into a kind of glen the
ated. The grass was burning on all
d as I went still farther up, I could
of the natives, and I felt pretty sure
I was, however, slightly anxious

hat reception I should get. I soon saw a ative leisurely walking along in front of me uana in his hand, taking it home for supper. ied several spears, a wommerah, and a nd had long curled locks hanging down his s. My horse's nose nearly touched his ore he was aware of my presence, when, behind him, he gave a sudden start, held o hands, dropped his guana and his spears, tremendous yell as a warning to his tribe, ided up the rocks in front of us like a I then passed under a eucalyptus-tree, foliage two ancient warriors had hastily themselves. I stopped a second and at them, they also looked at me; they a most ludicrous appearance. A little there were several rows of wurleys, and ceive the men urging the women and ay, as they doubtless supposed many men were in company with me, never could possibly be alone. While the children were departing up the rocks, ched up spears and other weapons, and women slowly towards the rocks. The e narrowed to a gorge, the rocks on ing not more than eighty to a hundred t is no exaggeration to say that the he rocks on either side of the glen ith natives; they could almost touch spears. I did not feel quite at home ng retreat, although I was the cynosure eyes. The natives stood upon the ocks like statues, some pointing their ingly towards me, and I certainly

that some dozens would be thro
ties seemed paralysed by the a
her. I scarcely knew what to do
ed to retreat that every spear
at me. I was, metaphorically,
ot. I thought the only thing t
the situation out, as
ds, 'tis said, in certain situations
ve a sort of courage from despair;
en perform, from downright desperation,
h bolder deeds than many a braver man wo
oking with thirst, though in vain I
et of water; but seeing where th
some sand, I advanced to one
which I could see water, but wit
y a native could get any out of
ed hole. In sheer desperation
d picked up a small wooden utens
wurleys, thinking if I could only
I summon up pluck for the last
ld dirty water, and my horse was
op of me. So far as I could see,
o or three of these places where
got water. I remounted my h
est and fastest I have. He k
I wanted because he wished it a
o be gone. I mounted slowly wi
enemy, but the instant I was on h
and was away with a bound that
behind; then such demoniacal yells
as I had never heard before and do
again; the echoes of the voices of
ant and infuriated creatures rever-

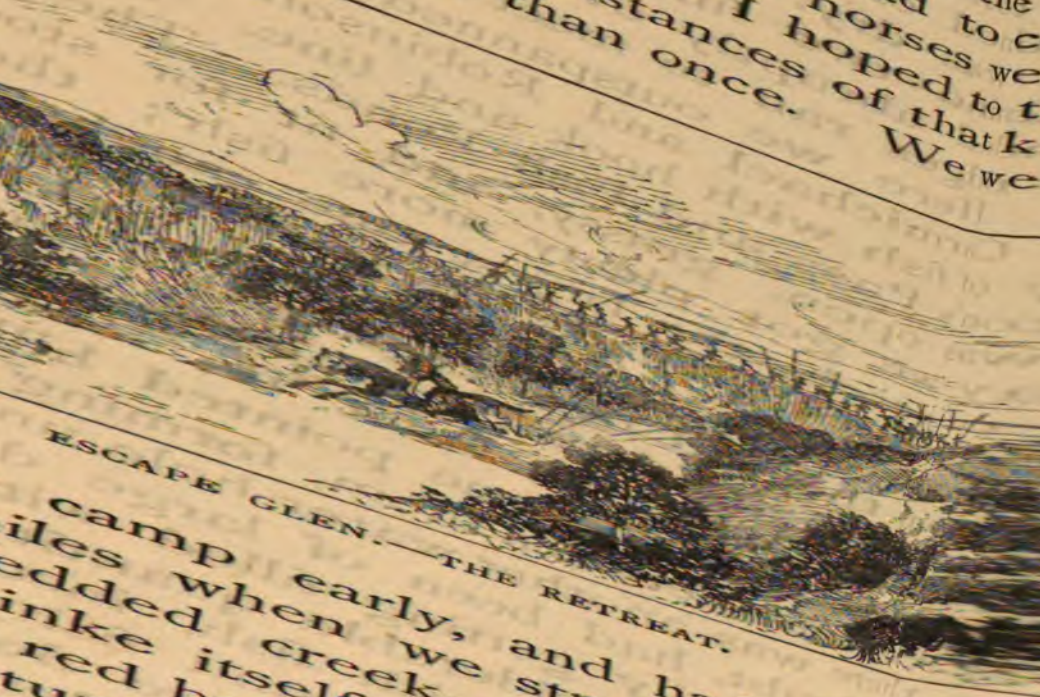
erating through the defiles of the hills, and the ncouth sounds of the voices themselves smote so iscordantly on my own and my horse's ears that 'e went out of that glen faster, oh! ever so much ıster, than we went in. I heard a horrid sound of pears, sticks, and other weapons, striking violently pon the ground behind me, but I did not stop to pick p any of them, or even to look round to see what aused it. Upon rejoining my companions, as we



ESCAPE GLEN.—THE ADVANCE.

ow seldom spoke to one another, I merely told nem I had seen water and natives, but that it was ırdly worth while to go back to the place, but that ey could go if they liked. Robinson asked me y I had ridden my horse West Australian— rtened to W. A., but usually called Guts, from his istent attention to his "inwards"—so hard n there seemed no likelihoods of our getting water for the night? I said, "Ride him back

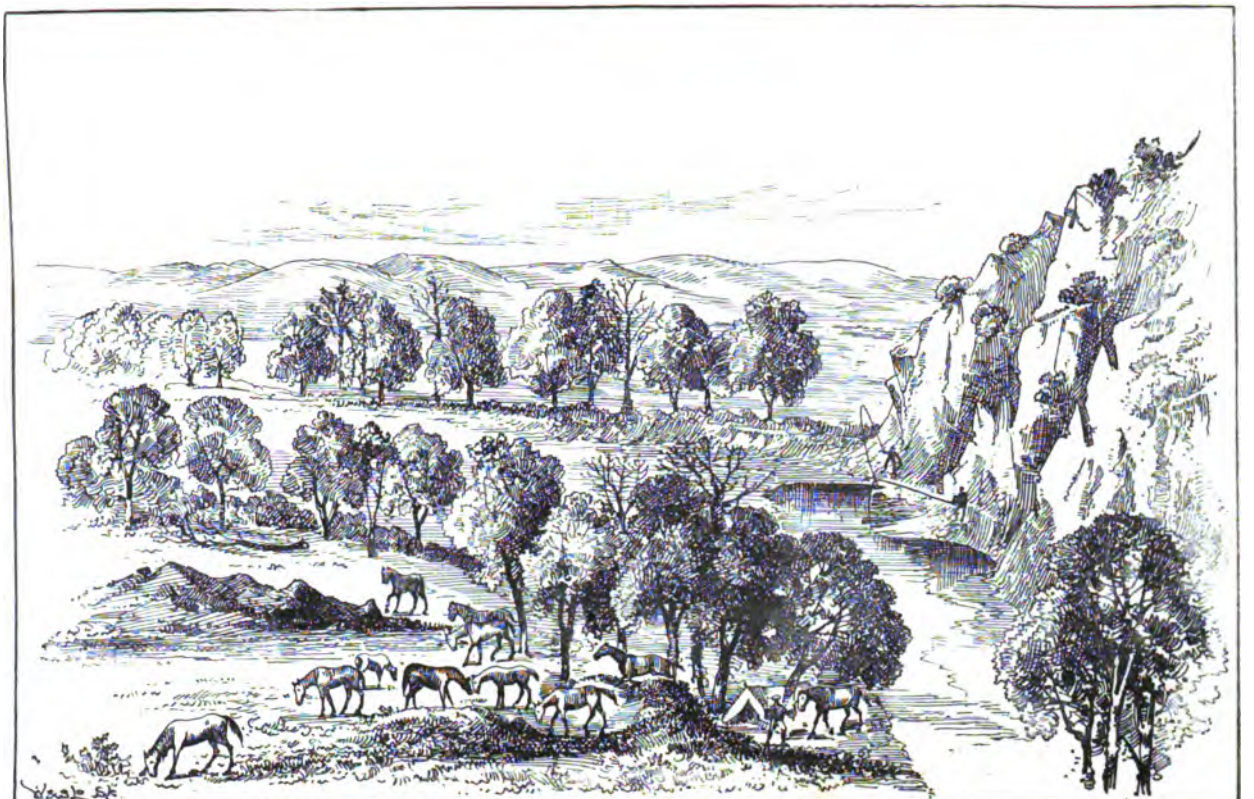
I called this place Escape G
ree miles after I overtook them, t
ame exhausted on the plains. W
east, as now we must strike the
to fifty miles; but we had to c
hout water. The lame horses we
r they were driven. I hoped to t
out of them, as instances of that k
with me more than once. We we



ESCAPE GLEN.—THE RETREAT.

camp early, and had scarcely
iles when we struck the bank o
edded creek, which was almost
inke itself: just where we struck
red bank twenty or thirty feet high,
turally looking down into the bed
ly old file of a horse, that carried my
nstruments, papers, quicksilver, &c.,
the bank crumbled under him, and

down he fell, raising a cloud of red dust. I rode up immediately, expecting to see a fine smash, but no, there he was, walking along on the sandy bed below, as comfortable as he had been on top, not a strap strained or a box shifted in the least. The bed here was dry. Robinson rode on ahead and shortly found two fine large ponds under a hill which ended abruptly over them. On our side a few low ridges ran to meet it, thus forming a kind of pass. Here we outspanned; it was a splendid place. Carmichael and Robinson caught a great quantity of fish with hook and line. I called these Middleton's Pass and Fish Ponds. The country all round was open, grassy, and fit for stock. The next day we got plenty more fish; they were a species of perch, the largest one caught weighed, I dare say, three pounds; they had a great resemblance to Murray cod, which is a species of perch. I saw from the hill overhanging the water that the creek trended south-east. Going in that direction we did not, however, meet it; so turning more easterly, we sighted some pointed hills, and found the creek went between them, forming another pass, where there was another water-hole under the rocks. This, no doubt, had been of large dimensions, but was now gradually getting filled with sand; there was, however, a considerable quantity of water, and it was literally alive with fish, insomuch that the water had a disagreeable and fishy taste. Great numbers of the dead fish were floating upon the water. Here we met a considerable number of natives, and although the women would not come close, several of the men did, and made themselves useful by holding some of the horses' bridles and

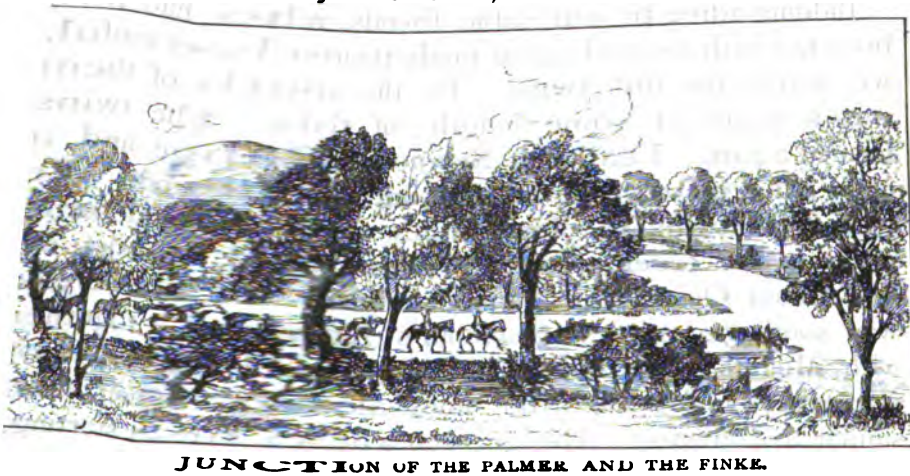


MIDDLETON'S PASS AND FISH PONDS.

[*Page* 124. *Vol. I.*

getting firewood. Most of them had
them by their godfathers at their ba
to say, either by the officers or men of
Telegraph Construction parties. This
second camp; I called it Rogers's Pass
spicious was our day's stage. From h
miles semi-conical hills, or as I
fronted by almost identical
cutting my cones, of almost
Bidding adieu to our sable friends,
breakfast with us and again made them
was started for the twins. To the s
formed a part of some length; of th
comic hill at its western end I called it Seymour's
passed the twins in eleven miles, and
water in the creek near a peculiar r
hill, M n; the general course
was Quin and Ormerod, had
horizontal lines along
ston's Range, seen when
s lying east and west of
ed range we were a
Not far from Mount C
er-holes in a lateral ch
nearly east, and havin
horning by Aldeberan, I
pated, namely, that I
k I had called No. 2.
Finke at my outgoing
ater-hole to-day, fence
was a low range to the

and a tent-shaped hill more easterly. We rested the horses at the fenced-in water-hole. I walked to the top of the tent hill, and saw the creek went through another pass to the north-east. In the afternoon I rode over to this pass and found some ponds of water on this side of it. A bullock whose tracks I had seen further up the creek had got bogged here. We next travelled through the pass, which I called Briscoe's Pass, the creek now turning up nearly north-east; in six miles further it ran



JUNCTION OF THE PALMER AND THE FINKE.

under a hill, which I well remembered in going out; at thirteen miles from the camp it ended in the broader bosom of the Finke, where there was a fine water-hole at the junction, in the bed of the smaller creek, which was called the Palmer. The Finke now appeared very different to when we passed up. then had a stream of water running along its channel, but was now almost dry, except that water eared at intervals upon the surface of the white sandy bed, which, however, was generally

y or bitter; others, again, were dr
Upon reaching the river we camp
edition was over. I had failed
ect, which was to penetrate to the
rchison River, but not through
I think any impartial reader will
ing tracks were very indistinct,
e; we camped again at No. 1-
as nearly east, along the course
sing a few miles south of Char
ad left it but twelve weeks an
g that interval I had traverse
over a thousand miles of pre-
own country. Had I been for
ave fallen upon a good or even
try, the distance I actually tra
aken me across the continent.
e make a few remarks upon the
called a river, although its water
how upon the surface. Over la
avelling up or down the road along
lian Trans-Continental Telegraph
er does show on the surface, call
water is always running under
in certain places it becomes im
neral and salty formations, which
sagreeable taste. This peculiar
es in the western portions of
ange, not far from where I tra
s for over 500 miles straight in
westerly direction, finally entering th
f Lake Eyre. It drains an enormou
South Australia, and on the parallel
of south latitude, no other stream

xists between it and the Murchison or the Asbur-
on, a distance in either case of nearly 1,100 miles,
nd thus it will be seen it is the only Central
Australian river.

On the 21st of November we reached the tele-
graph line at the junction of the Finke and the
Hugh. The weather during this month, and almost
to its close, was much cooler than the preceding one.
The horses were divided between us—Robinson
getting six, Carmichael four, and I five. Carmichael
and Robinson went down the country, in company,
in advance of me, as fast as they could. I travelled
more slowly by myself. One night, when near what
is called the Horse-shoe bend of the Finke, I had
turned out my horses, and as it seemed inclined to
rain, was erecting a small tent, and on looking round
for the tomahawk to drive a stake into the ground,
was surprised to notice a very handsome little black
boy, about nine or ten years old, quite close to me.
I patted him on the head, whereupon he smiled
very sweetly, and began to talk most fluently in his
own language—I found he interspersed his remarks
frequently with the words Larapinta, white fellow,
and yarraman (horses). He told me two white
men, Carmichael and Robinson, and ten horses, had
gone down, and that white fellows, with horses and
amel drays (Gosse's expedition), had just gone up
e line. While we were talking, two smaller boys
me up and were patted, and patted me in return.
The water on the surface here was bitter, and I
not been able to find any good, but these little
s of iniquity took my tin billy, scratched a hole
e sand, and immediately procured delicious
; so I got them to help to water the horses

he elder boy, whom I christened
ld come along with me and the ya
they seemed very fond, as th
vhile helping to water them.
d a word or two of English, and sa
, dealing with, whether a person is
vant. The natives always like to kn
n
;," said, I replied, "Yes, mine
"Which one?" "Mine (him) ridem yan
to old Cocky, and said, "That one,"
e boy went up to the horse, and
l you ridem me?" Turning to
y right, master, you and I me Burr—
le well pleased to think It should g
d fellow so easily. It was no
very knowing that these youngsters or m
Where far from their fathers
lantly, "Black fellow?" Tommy
heard voices, and saw a come up
g squeaky harangue to the other
men and children. Then these three
One and five or six boys came
n was a middle-aged, good-lo
were two boys, and Tommy
and that these were his father
father drew Tommy towards
, three boys in a row, and when
ey it was impossible to doubt their
more men, boys, and women came
the girls being exceedingly pretty.
a host, would have required all my

horses as well as my stock of rations, so I singled out Tommy, his two brothers, and the other original little two, at the same time, giving Tommy's father about half a damper I had already cooked, and told him that Tommy was my boy. He shook his head slowly, and would not accept the damper, walking somewhat sorrowfully away. However, I sent it to him by Tommy, and told him to tell his father he was going with me and the horses. The damper was taken that time. It did not rain, and the five youngsters all slept near me, while the tribe encamped a hundred yards away. I was not quite sure whether to expect an attack from such a number of natives. I did not feel quite at ease; though these were, so to say, civilised people, they were known to be great thieves; and I never went out of sight of my belongings, as in many cases the more civilised they are, the more villainous they may be. In the morning Tommy's father seemed to have thought better of my proposal, thinking probably it was a good thing for one of his boys to have a white master. I may say nearly all the civilised youngsters, and a good many old ones too, like to get work, regular rations, and tobacco, from the cattle or telegraph stations, which of course do employ a good many. When one of these is tired of his work, he has to bring up a substitute and inform his employer, and thus a continual change goes on. The boys brought up the horses, and breakfast being eaten, the father led Tommy up to me and put his little hand in mine; at the same time giving me a small piece of stick, and pretending to thrash him; represented to me that, if he didn't behave himself, I was to thrash him. I

old fellow some old clothes (Tom
lressed up), also some flour, tea, a
l the child on to old Cocky's sad
lise in front, with two straps for th
on by. I pretend
ted to come on foot. two young
ry, and Tommy must have said so
ced them to remain. I led the h
riding, and had to drive the other
me. When we departed, the nativ
howls or cheers, and finally we go
ch. The boy seemed quite delighte
situation, and talked away at a gre
as we reached the road, by some
chance, all my stock of wax m
l Badger, caught alight; a perfect
l the novel sight of a pack-horse
This sent him mad, and away
er pack-horses flew down the road
s, and were out of sight in no
oy to cling on as I started to
He did so for a bit, but slippi
cky gave a buck, and sent To
e stumps of timber cut down fo
e telegraph line, and the boy fell
oke his arm near the shoulder-
up and went to help the child,
oit at me, and said something abou
ng me. Every time I tried to touch
t was the same. I did not know
horses were miles away. I decided
where he was, go after the horses,
with them to my last night's camp,
back to his father. When he saw

me mount, he howled and yelled, but I gave hi
to understand what I was going to do, and he la
down and cried. I was full of pity for the poo
little creature, and I only left him to return.
started away, and not until I had been at full gallo
for an hour did I sight the runaway horses. Cock
got away when the accident occurred, and gallope
after and found the others, and his advent evidentl
set them off a second time. Returning to the boy
I saw some smoke, and on approaching close, foun
a young black fellow also there. He had boun
up the child's arm with leaves, and wrapped it u
with bits of bark; and when I came he damped i
with water from my bag. I then suggested t
these two to return; but oh no, the new chap wa
evidently bound to seek his fortune in London—tha
is to say, at the Charlotte Waters Station—and h
merely remarked, "You, mine, boy, Burr-r-r-r-r, whit
fellow wurley;" he also said, "Mine, boy, walk
you, yarraman—mine, boy, sleep you wurley, yo
Burr-r-r-r-r yarraman." All this meant that the
would walk and I might ride, and that they woul
camp with me at night. Off I went and left them, a
I had a good way to go. I rode and they walked t
the Charlotte- I got the little boy regular meals a
the station; but his arm was still bad, and I don't
know if it ever got right. I never saw him again.

At the Charlotte Waters I met Colonel Warburton
and his son; they were going into the regions I had
just returned from. I gave them all the information
they asked, and showed them my map; but they
and Gosse's expedition went further up the line
to the Alice springs, in the McDonnell Ranges, fo
a starting-point- I was very kindly received here

nd remained a few days. My
had got bad again, in consequen
g with the pack-horses, and I left h
the Charlotte, in charge of Mr.
val at the Peake, I found that M
ken his collar-bone by a fall from
him to the Blinman Mine, where
ch for Adelaide. At Beltana, be
the Blinman Mine, I heard that my
y Dick was in that neighbourhoo
ndler, whom I had met at the C
nd who was now stationed here, P
l keep him for me until I either
n : this he did. And thus ends
explorations.

BOOK II.

TO THE SECOND EXPED

ner part of my narrative I me
oon as I had informed my ki
n Mueller by wire from the
elegraph Station, of the failure an
xpedition, he set to work and
nd for me to continue my
e greatest despatch was used,
kly I obtained, yet it require
re in could again depart. I
e January, 1873, and as
ailable I set to work at the
expedition. I obtained the
iend named William Henry
ver from Melbourne to join me
ng fellow named James Andr
lways called him. I bought
rap and several horses, and
in March, 1873. We drove up th
of the Burra mines to Port A
Spencer's Gulf, buying horses as we
g some pack saddles on the wagon,
n our new purchases as we got
Adelaide I had instructed Messrs.

Tassie & Co., of Port Augusta, to forward certain stores required for our journey, which loading had already been despatched by teams to the Peake. We made a leisurely journey up the country, as it was of no use to overtake our stores. At Beltana Mr. Chandler had got and kept my black boy Dick, who pretended to be overjoyed to see me, and perhaps he really was; but he was extra effusive in his affection, and now declared he had been a silly young fool, that he didn't care for wild blacks now a bit, and would go with me anywhere. When Mr. Chandler got him he was half starved, living in a blacks' camp, and had scarcely any clothes. Leaving Beltana, in a few days we passed the Finniss Springs Station, and one of the people there made all sorts of overtures to Dick, who was now dressed in good clothes, and having had some good living lately, had got into pretty good condition; some promises must have been made him, as when we reached the Gregory, he bolted away, and I never saw him afterwards.

The Gregory was now running, and by simply dipping out a bucketful of water, several dozens of minnows could be caught. In this way we got plenty of them, and frying them in butter, just as they were, they proved the most delicious food it was possible to eat, equal, if not superior, to whitebait. Nothing of a very interesting nature occurred during our journey up to the Peake, where we were welcomed by the Messrs. Bagot at the Cattle Station, and Mr. Blood of the Telegraph Department. Here we fixed up all our packs, sold Mr. Bagot the wagon, and bought horses and other things; we had now twenty pack-horses and four riding ditto.

Here a short young man accosted me, and asked me if I did not remember him, saying at the same time that he was "Alf." I fancied I knew his face, but thought it was at the Peake that I had seen him, but he said, "Oh no, don't you remember Alf with Bagot's sheep at the north-west bend of the Murray? my name's Alf Gibson, and I want to go out with you." I said, "Well, can you shoe? can you ride? can you starve? can you go without water? and how would you like to be speared by the blacks outside?" He said he could do everything I had mentioned, and he wasn't afraid of the blacks. He was not a man I would have picked out of a mob, but men were scarce, and as he seemed so anxious to come, and as I wanted somebody, I agreed to take him. We got all our horses shod, and two extra sets of shoes fitted for each, marked, and packed away. I had a little black-and-tan terrier dog called Cocky, and Gibson had a little pup of the same breed, which he was so anxious to take that at last I permitted him to do so.

Our horses' loads were very heavy at starting, the greater number of the horses carrying 200 lbs. The animals were not in very good condition; I got the horse I had formerly left here, Badger, the one whose pack had been on fire at the end of my last trip. I had decided to make a start upon this expedition from a place known as Ross's Water-hole in the Alberga Creek, at its junction with the Stevenson, the Alberga being one of the principal tributaries of the Finke. The position of Ross's Water-hole is in latitude 27° 8′ and longitude 135° 45′, it lying 120 to 130 miles in latitude more to the south than the Mount Olga of my first

journey, which was a point I was most desirous to reach. Having tried without success to reach it from the north, I now intended to try from a more southerly line. Ross's Water-hole is called ninety miles from the Peake, and we arrived there without any difficulty. The nights now were exceedingly cold, as it was near the end of July. When we arrived I left the others in camp and rode myself to the Charlotte Waters, expecting to get my old horse Cocky, and load him with 200 lbs. of flour; but when I arrived there, the creek water-hole was dry, and all the horses running loose on the Finke. I got two black boys to go out and try to get the horse, but on foot in the first place they could never have done it, and in the second place, when they returned, they said they could not find him at all. I sent others, but to no purpose, and eventually had to leave the place without getting him, and returned empty-handed to the depot, having had my journey and lost my time for nothing.

There was but poor feed at the water-hole, every teamster and traveller always camping there. Some few natives appeared at the camp, and brought some boys and girls. An old man said he could get me a flour-bag full of salt up the creek, so I despatched him for it; he brought back a little bit of dirty salty gravel in one hand, and expected a lot of flour, tea, sugar, meat, tobacco, and clothes for it; but I considered my future probable requirements, and refrained from too much generosity. A nice little boy called Albert agreed to come with us, but the old man would not allow him—I suppose on account of the poor reward he got for his salt. A young black fellow here said he had found a

white man's musket a long way up the
that he had got it in his wurley, and
it to me for flour, tea, sugar, tobacco, m
clothes. I only promised flour, and aw
to get the weapon. Next day he ret
before reaching the camp began to y
fellow mukkety, white fellow mukkety."
he had no such thing in his hands, b
arrived he unfolded a piece of dirty
handkerchief, from which he produced
old discharged copper revolver cart
reward was commensurate with his priz
The expedition consisted of four
namely, myself, Mr. William Henry Ti
Gibson, and James Andrews, with
horses and two little dogs. On Frid
August, 187, we were prepared to
stopped us; rain on Sunday some
finally left e encampment on th
onday, the th.

CHAPTER I.

THE 4TH TO THE 22ND AUGUST,

he west—Ascend the Alberga—An old
under, and lightning—Leave Alberga for
renched in the night—Two lords of the
ngé—Water-holes—Pretty amphitheatre—
de—Watering the horses—A row of
nd poplars—Dig a tank—Hot wind—
igher hills—Flat-topped hills—Singular
ntry—A horse staked—Bluff-faced hills—
ange—Cool nights—Tent-shaped scene—
Romantic valley—Picturesque fragrance—
utiful country—Gusts of well—
e hills—Large creek—Native Shooting
Krichauff—Cold nights—Dense
vincit—Thermometer 28°—Beautiful open
-Native pheasant's nest—Beautiful open
iew—Rocks piled on rocks.

he 4th August, 1873, my new
ry favourable circumstances,
Water-hole in the Alberga.
which the Alberga here runs
stony, but good country for stock
he road and the telegraph line are
es apart. At that distance up the
t, we reached it. The frame of an
onvenient for turning into a house,
or a roof, as there appeared a like-

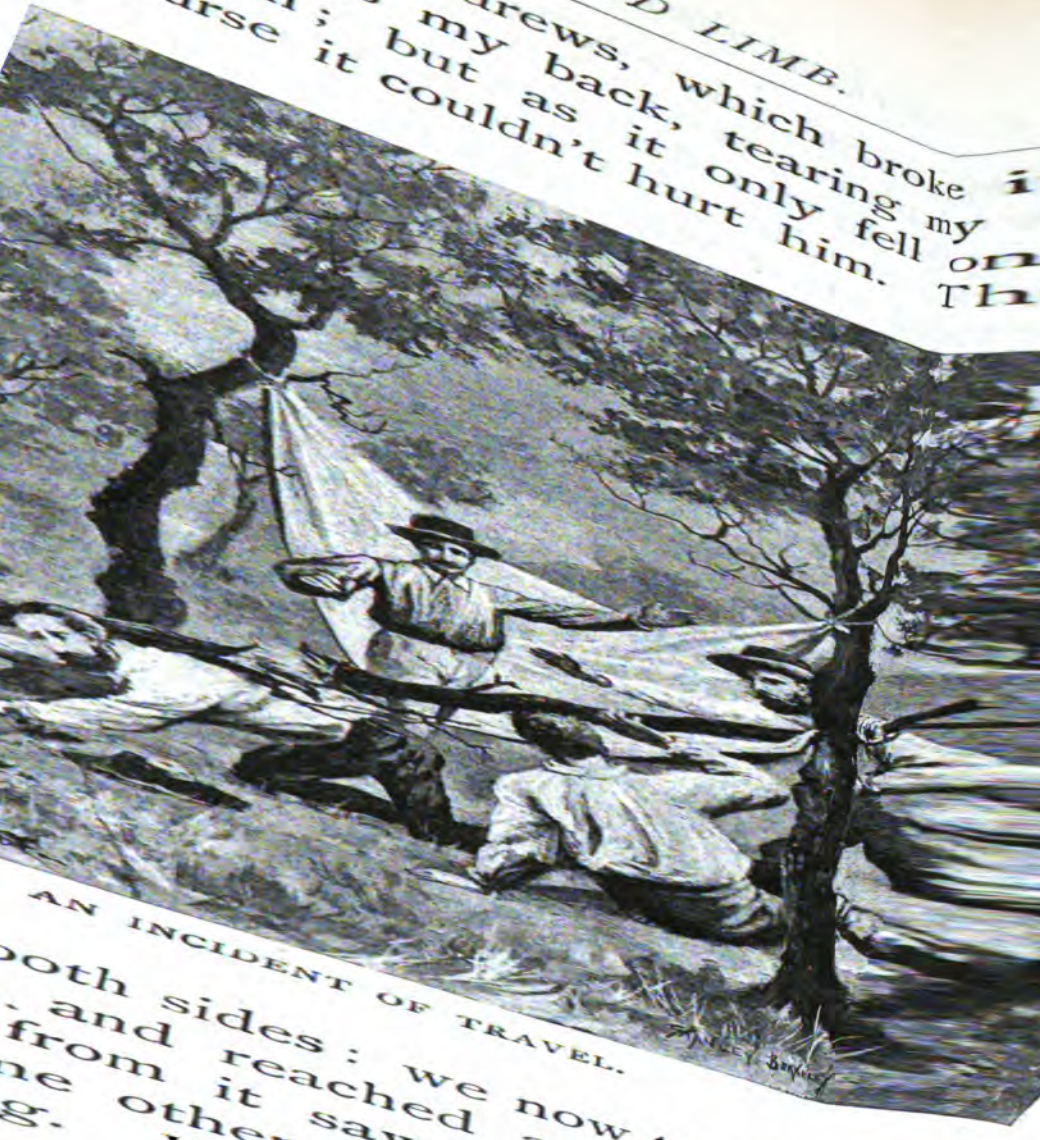
lihoods of more rain. Some water was got in a clay-pan in the neighbourhood.

A misty and cloudy morning warned us to keep under canvas: rain fell at intervals during the day, and at sundown heavy thunder and bright lightning came from the north-west, with a closing good smart shower. The next morning was fine and clear, though the night had been extremely cold. The bed of this creek proved broad but ill-defined and cut up into numerous channels. Farther along the creek a more scrubby region was found; the soil was soft after the rain, but no water was seen lying about. The creek seemed to be getting smaller; I did not like its appearance very much so struck away north-west. The country now was all thick mulga scrub and grassy sandhills; among these we found a clay-pan with some water in. At night we were still in the scrub, without water but we were not destined to leave it without a for at ten o'clock a thunderstorm from the north west came up, and before we could get half things under canvas, we were thoroughly drenched. Off our tarpaulins we obtained plenty of water breakfast; but the ground would not retain. Sixteen miles farther along we came down on the sandhills to a creek where we found water and camped, but the grass was very poor, dry, innutritious. More rain threatened, but the morning was dry, and the morning clear and beautiful. The creek was the Hamilton. Two of its native visited the camp this morning, and did not appear all inclined to leave it. The creek is here timber is small and stunted. The two Hamiltonians put on a and sandy: the wards evening

pudence, and became very obje
three times I had to resist their
nto the camp, and at last the
me. I couldn't quite make out
one another; but I gathered they
n in their tribe, and were anxiously lo
discharging and cleaning all directions. Finally, as after
we fired them off, and so soo
aw us first handle and then discharg
vent, and returned to Balclutha no
farther up the creek, we met som
with fine little water-holes. Som
ached the water creek; from the top
ts of the creek glittered in stony cl
rly the creek ran under a hill.
utary where there was plenty of
a large clay-hole in the main
yer, dry. When there was som
ives had fenced it round to ca
hat might come to drink; at
ved the trouble, for game and
e departed. Mr. Tietkens, m
ond in command, found a very
ormed by the hills; we enc
clay-pans; the grass, however,
bs appeared on the other side of th
ion with another creek occurred near
hich the channel was broad, flat,
ered indiscriminately with timber;
n either bank. We had to cross
ed as the best road. We found a
the natives had dug, and where
ut the supply was very unsatis-

factory, an enormous quantity of sand having to be shifted before the most willing horse could get down to it. We succeeded at length with the aid of canvas buckets, and by the time the whole twenty-four were satisfied, we were also. The grass was dry as usual, but the horses ate it, probably because there is no other for them. Our course to-day was 8° south of west. Close to where we encamped were three or four saplings placed in a row in the bed of the creek, and a diminutive tent-frame, as though some one, if not done by native children, had been playing at erecting a miniature telegraph line. I did not like this creek much more than the Alberga, and decided to try the country still farther north-west. This we did, passing through somewhat thick scrubs for eighteen miles, when we came full upon the creek again, and here for the first time since we started we noticed some bunches of spinifex, the Festuca irritans, and some native poplar trees. These have a straight stem, and are in outline somewhat like a pine-tree, but the foliage is of a fainter green, and different-shaped leaf. They are very pretty to the eye, but generally inhabit the very poorest regions; the botanical name of this tree is Codonocarpus cotinifolius. At five miles farther we dug in the bed of the creek, but only our riding-horses could be watered by night. White pipeclay existed on the bed. The weather was oppressive to-day. Here my latitude was 26° 27′, longitude 134°. It took all next day to water the horses. Thermometer 92° in shade, hot wind blowing. The dead limb of a tree, to which we fixed our tarpaulin as an awning for shade, slipped down while we were at dinner; it first fell on the

Jimmy Andrews, which broke i
fell across my back, tearing my
nd skin; but as it only fell on
course it couldn't hurt him. Th



AN INCIDENT OF TRAVEL.

oth sides: we now travelled about
. and reached a low stony rise in
from it saw the creek stretching
ne other ridges nearly on the line
g. We skirted the creek, and in

even miles we saw other hills of greater elevation
han any we had yet seen.

Reaching the first ridge, we got water by digging
a few inches into the pipeclay bed of the creek; a
more extended view was here obtained, and range
appeared from west, round by north-west, to north;
there were many flat-topped hills and several singu-
lar cones, and the country appeared more open.
I was much pleased to think I had distanced the
scrubs. One cone in the new range bore north
52° west, and for some distance the creek trended
that way. On reaching the foot of the new hills, I
found the creek had greatly altered its appearance,
if indeed it was the same. It is possible the main
creek may have turned more to the west, and that
this is only a tributary, but as we found some sur-
face water in a clay-hole, we liked it better than
having to dig in a larger channel. Here for the first
time for many weeks we came upon some green
grass, which the horses greedily devoured. The
country here is much better and more open. On
mustering the horses this morning, one was found
to be dead lame, with a mulga stake in his conet,
and as he could not travel we were forced to remain
at the camp; at least the camp was not shifted. This
horse was called Trew; he was one of the best in
the mob, though then I had not found out all his
good qualities—he now simply carried a pack.
Mr. Tietkens and I mounted our horses and rode
farther up the creek. The channel had partly
recovered its appearance, and it may be our old one
after all. Above the camp its course was nearly
north, and a line of low bluff-faced hills formed its
eastern bank. The country towards the new ranges

ed open and inviting, and we rode to a promi-
cone in it, to the west-north-west. The country
excellent, being open and grassy, and having
otton and salt bush flats all over it: there was
e water in clay-pans lying about. I called
Anthony Range. We returned much pleased
r day's ride.

nights were now agreeably cool, sometimes
y. The lame horse was still very bad, but
ened his load, and after the first mile he
pretty well. We steered for the singular
vance. Most of the hills, however, of the
Range were flat-topped, though many tent-
es exist also. I ascended the cone in
rest of north-west from camp. The view
ills for miles in all directions, amongst
many bare rocks of red colour heaped
st fantastically tossed mounds imagin-
ere and there an odd shrub growing
stices of the rocks; some small minia-
th only myal and mulga growing in
ough the valleys—all of these had
unning. We camped a mile or two
ne in an extremely pretty and
the grass was green, and Nature a
of her smiling moods, throwing
e on the minds of the adventurers
her in one of her wilderness
y miserable creature in our party
e, but now indeed he had a mate
we found that another horse
staked himself during our day's
did not appear lame until we
bles were about to be put on.

Mr. Tietkens extracted a long mulga stick from his fetlock: neither of the two staked horses ever became sound again, although they worked well enough. In the night, or rather by morning (daylight), the thermometer had fallen to 30°, and though there was a heavy dew there was neither frost nor ice.

We now passed up to the head of the picturesque valley, and from there wound round some of the mounds of bare rocks previously mentioned. They are composed of a kind of a red conglomerate granite. We turned in and out amongst the hills till we arrived at the banks of a small creek lined with eucalyptus or gum-trees, and finding some water we encamped on a piece of beautiful-looking country, splendidly grassed and ornamented with the fantastic mounds, and the creek timber as back and fore grounds for the picture. Small birds twittered on each bough, sang their little songs of love or hate, and gleefully fled or pursued each other from tree to tree. The atmosphere seemed cleared of all grossness or impurities, a few sunlit clouds floated in space, and a perfume from Nature's own laboratory was exhaled from the flowers and vegetation around. It might well be said that here were

> "Gusts of fragrance on the grasses,
> In the skies a softened splendour;
> Through the copse and woodland passes
> Songs of birds in cadence tender."

The country was so agreeable here we had no desire to traverse it at railway speed; it was delightful to loll and lie upon the land, in abandoned languishment beneath the solar ray. Thirty or forty

miles farther away, west-north-westward, other and independent hills or ranges stood, though I was grieved to remark that the intermediate region seemed entirely filled with scrub. How soon the scenery changes! Travelling now for the new hills, we soon entered scrubs, where some plots of the dreaded triodia were avoided. In the scrubs, at ten miles we came upon the banks of a large gum-timbered creek, whose trees were fine and vigorous. In the bed we found a native well, with water at no great depth; the course of this creek where we struck it, was south-south-east, and we travelled along its banks in an opposite, that is to say, north-north-west direction. That line, however, took us immediately into the thick scrubs, so at four miles on this bearing I climbed a tree, and saw that I must turn north to cut it again; this I did, and in three miles we came at right angles upon a creek which I felt sure was not the one we had left, the scrub being so thick one could hardly see a yard ahead. Here I sent Jimmy Andrews up a tree; having been a sailor boy, he is well skilled in that kind of performance, but I am not. I told him to discover the whereabouts of the main creek, and say how far off it appeared. That brilliant genius informed me that it lay across the course we were steering, north, and it was only a mile away; so we went on to it, as we supposed, but having gone more than two miles and not reaching it, I asked Jimmy whether he had not made some mistake. I said, "We have already come two miles, and you said it was scarcely one." He then kindly informed me that I was going all wrong, and ought not to go that way at all; but upon my questioning him as to which way

I should go he replied, "Oh, I don't know *now*." My only plan was to turn east, when we soon struck the creek. Then Jimmy declared if we had *kept north long enough*, we would have come to it *agin*.

Though Jimmy was certainly a bit of a fool, he was not perhaps quite a fool of the greatest size. Little fools and young fools somehow seem to pass muster in this peculiar world, but to be old and a fool is a mistake which is difficult, if not impossible, to remedy. It was too late to go any farther; we couldn't get any water, but we had to camp. I intended to return in the morning to where we first struck this creek, and where we saw water in the native well. I called this the Krichauff. The mercury went down to 28° by daylight the next morning, but neither ice nor frost appeared. This morning Mr. Tietkens, when out after the horses, found a rather deep native well some distance up the creek, and we shifted the camp to it. On the way there I was behind the party, and before I overtook them I heard the report of firearms. On reaching the horses, Jimmy Andrews had his revolver in his hand, Mr. Tietkens and Gibson being away. On inquiring of Jimmy the cause of the reports and the reason of his having his revolver in his hand, he replied that he thought Mr. Tietkens was shooting the blacks, and he had determined to slaughter his share if they attacked him. Mr. Tietkens had fired at some wallabies, which, however, did not appear at dinner. On arrival at the new well, we had a vast amount of work to perform, and only three or four horses got water by night.

I told Mr. Tietkens not to work himself to death, as I would retreat in the morning to where there

was water, but he persisted in working away by himself in the night, and was actually able to water all the horses in the morning. Labor omnia vincit. Last night there was a heavy fall of dew, thermometer 28°, but no frost or ice. I was delighted to turn my back upon this wretched place.

The object of our present line was to reach the new hills seen from the Anthony Range. Three of them appeared higher than, and isolated from, the others. They now bore west of us—at least they should have done so, and I hoped they did, for in such thick scrubs it was quite impossible to see them. No matter for that, we steered west for them and traversed a region of dense scrubs. I was compelled to ride in advance with a bell on my stirrup to enable the others to hear which way to come. In seventeen miles we struck a small gum creek without water, but there was good herbage. In the scrubs to-day we saw a native pheasant's nest, the Leipoa ocellata of Gould, but there were no eggs in it. This bird is known by different names in different parts of Australia. On the eastern half of the continent it is usually called the Lowan, while in Western Australia it is known as the Gnow; both I believe are native names. Another cold night, thermometer 26°, with a slight hoar frost. Moving on still west through scrubs, but not so thick as yesterday, some beautiful and open ground was met till we reached the foot of some low ridges.

From the top of one of these, we had before us a most charming view, red ridges of extraordinary shapes and appearance being tossed up in all directions, with the slopes of the soil, from whence

they seemed to spring, rising gently, and with verdure clad in a garment of grass whose skirts were fringed with flowers to their feet. These slopes were beautifully bedecked with flowers of the most varied hues, throwing a magic charm over the entire scene. Vast bare red

> "Rocks piled on rocks stupendous hurled,
> Like fragments of an earlier world,"

appeared everywhere, but the main tier of ranges for which I had been steering was still several miles farther away to the west. Thinking that water, the scarcest here of Nature's gifts, must surely exist in such a lovely region as this, it was more with the keen and critical eye of the explorer in search of that element, than of the admirer of Nature in her wildest grace, that I surveyed the scene. A small gum creek lay to the south, to which Mr. Tietkens went. I sent Gibson to a spot about two miles off to the west, as straight before us in that direction lay a huge mass of rocks and bare slabs of stone, which might have rock reservoirs amongst them. To the north lay a longer jumble of hills, with overhanging ledges and bare precipices, which I undertook to search, leaving Jimmy to mind the horses until some of us returned. Neither Mr. Tietkens nor Gibson could find any water, and I was returning quite disappointed, after wandering over hills and rocks, through gullies and under ledges, when at length I espied a small and very fertile little glen whose brighter green attracted my notice. Here a small gully came down between two hills, and in the bed of the little channel I saw a patch of blacker

soil, and on reaching it I found a small but deep native well with a little water at the bottom. It was an extraordinary little spot, and being funnel-shaped, I doubted whether any animal but a bird or a black man could get down to it, and I also expected it would prove a hideous bog; but my little friend (W. A.) seemed so determined to test its nature, and though it was nearly four feet to the water, he quietly let his forefeet slip down into it, and though his hindquarters were high and dry above his head he got a good drink, which he told me in his language he was very thankful for. I brought the whole party to the spot, and we had immediately to set to work to enlarge the well. We found the water supply by no means abundant, as, though we all worked hard at it in turns with the shovel, it did not drain in as fast as one horse could drink; but by making a large hole, we expected sufficient would drain in during the night for the remainder of the horses. We did not cease from our work until it was quite dark, when we retired to our encampment, quite sufficiently tired to make us sleep without the aid of any lullaby.

CHAPTER II.

FROM 22ND AUGUST TO 10TH SEPTEMBER, 1873.

A poor water supply—Seeds planted—Beautiful country—Ride westward—A chopped log—Magnetic hill—Singular scenery—Snail-shells—Cheering prospect westward—A new chain of hills—A nearer mountain—Vistas of green—Gibson finds water—Turtle backs—Ornamented Troglodytes' caves—Water and emus—Beef-wood-trees—Grassy lawns—Gum creek—Purple vetch—Cold dewy night—Jumbled turtle backs—Tietkens returns—I proceed—Two-storied native huts—Chinese doctrine—A wonderful mountain—Elegant trees—Extraordinary ridge—A garden—Nature imitates her imitator—Wild and strange view—Pool of water—A lonely camp—Between sleeping and waking—Extract from Byron for breakfast—Return for the party—Emus and water—Arrival of Tietkens—A good camp—Tietkens's birthday creek—Ascend the mountain—No signs of water—Gill's range—Flat-topped hill—The Everard range—High mounts westward—Snail shells—Altitude of the mountain—Pretty scenes—Parrot soup—The sentinel—Thermometer 26°—Frost—Lunar rainbow—A charming spot—A pool of water—Cones of the main range—A new pass—Dreams realised—A long glen—Glen Ferdinand—Mount Ferdinand—The Reid—Large creek—Disturb a native nation—Spears hurled—A regular attack—Repulse and return of the enemy—Their appearance—Encounter Creek—Mount Officer—The Currie—The Levinger—Excellent country—Horse-play——Mount Davenport—Small gap—A fairy space—The Fairies' Glen—Day dreams—Thermometer 24°—Ice—Mount Oberon—Titania's spring—Horses bewitched—Glen Watson—Mount Olga in view—The Musgrave range.

UPON inspection this morning we found but a poor supply of water had drained into our tank in the

night, and that there was by no means sufficient for the remaining horses; these had no water yesterday. We passed the forenoon in still enlarging the tank, and as soon as a bucketful drained in, it was given to one of the horses. We planted the seeds of a lot of vegetables and trees here, such as Tasmanian blue gum, wattle, melons, pumpkins, cucumbers, maize, &c.; and then Mr. Tietkens and I got our horses and rode to the main hills to the west, in hopes of discovering more water. We started late, and it was dark when we reached the range. The country passed over between it and our encampment, was exceedingly beautiful; hills being thrown up in red ridges of bare rock, with the native fig-tree growing among the rocks, festooning them into infinite groups of beauty, while the ground upon which we rode was a perfect carpet of verdure. We were therefore in high anticipation of finding some waters equivalent to the scene; but as night was advancing, our search had to be delayed until the morrow. The dew was falling fast, the night air was cool, and deliciously laden with the scented exhalations from trees and shrubs and flowers. The odour of almonds was intense, reminding me of the perfumes of the wattle blooms of the southern, eastern, and more fertile portions of this continent. So exquisite was the aroma, that I recalled to my mind Gordon's beautiful lines:—

> "In the spring when the wattle gold trembles,
> 'Twixt shadow and shine,
> When each dew-laden air draught resembles;
> A long draught of wine."

So delightful indeed was the evening that it was late when we gave ourselves up to the oblivion of slumber, beneath the cool and starry sky. We made a fire against a log about eighteen inches thick; this was a limb from an adjacent blood-wood or red gum-tree, and this morning we discovered that it had been chopped off its parent stem either with an axe or tomahawk, and carried some forty or fifty yards from where it had originally fallen. This seemed very strange; in the first place for natives, so far out from civilisation as this, to have axes or tomahawks; and in the second place, to chop logs or boughs off a tree was totally against their practice. By sunrise we were upon the summit of the mountain; it consisted of enormous blocks and boulders of red granite, so riven and fissured that no water could possibly lodge upon it for an instant. I found it also to be highly magnetic, there being a great deal of ironstone about the rocks. It turned the compass needle from its true north point to 10° south of west, but the attraction ceased when the compass was removed four feet from contact with the rocks. The view from this mount was of singular and almost awful beauty. The mount, and all the others connected with it, rose simply like islands out of a vast ocean of scrub. The beauty of the locality lay entirely within itself. Innumerable red ridges ornamented with fig-trees, rising out of green and grassy slopes, met the eye everywhere to the east, north, and north-east, and the country between each was just sufficiently timbered to add a charm to the view. But the appearance of water still was wanting; no signs of it, or of any basin or hollow

that could hold it, met the gaze
This alone was wanting to turn a
garden.

There were four large mou
higher than any of the rest, inc
was on. Here we saw a quantity
thought were white sea-shells, b
were the bleached shells of land
to the north some ranges appeare
ocean of intervening scrubs. To
reigned supreme; but to the w
which I was bound, the prospe
cheering. The far horizon, then
a very long and apparently conn
siderable elevation, seventy to
One conspicuous mountain, ev
the longer chain, bore 15° to
while an apparent gap or notch
line bore 23 south of west.
country appeared all flat, an
open than in any other directi
long vista green grass, do
mortell as the perspectiv
became n lightly timber
grassy were fair to see,
lost ie England's gl
forests green, where errant knig
forth in mail sheen; and m
recalls the tales of old
er lover, some y
nce, would poi
unheard-of dee
his sabre, and e
t defeat sure,

from tain, he must kill some monstrous creature, or return not till 'twas slain. Then she'd smile on him victorious, call him the bravest in the land, fame and her, to win, how glorious—win and keep her heart and hand!

Although no water was found here, what it pleases me to call my mind was immediately made up. I would return at once to the camp, where water was so scarce, and trust all to the newly discovered chain to the west. Water must surely exist there, we had but to reach it. I named these mounts Ayers Range. Upon returning to our camp, six or seven miles off, I saw that a mere dribble of water remained in the tank. Gibson was away after the horses, and when he brought them, he informed me he had found another place, with some water lying on the rocks, and two native wells close by with water in them, much shallower than our present one, and that they were about three miles away. I rode off with him to inspect his new discovery, and saw there was sufficient surface water for our horses for a day or two.

These rocks are most singular, being mostly huge red, rounded solid blocks of stone, shaped like the backs of enormous turtles. I was much pleased with Gibson's discovery, and we moved the camp down to this spot, which we always after called the Turtle Back. The grass and herbage were excellent, but the horses had not had sufficient water since we arrived here. It is wonderful how in such a rocky region so little water appears to exist. The surface water was rather difficult for the horses to reach, as it lay upon the extreme summit of the rock, the sides of which were very steep and

There were plenty of small and crows, a species of cockat and eagles soaring high above ere planted here, the soil being v e opposite or eastern side of this edge or cave, under which the Tr realms had frequently encamped. ted with many of their rude repres ng things, amongst which the serp nated; there were also other of things such as can exist only ons, and they are but the weak en benighted beings to give form ar the symbolisms of the dread super ing the vacant chambers of their d s amongst them in the place o or religion. rning, watering all our horses, and air bath on the top of the Turtle s and I got three of them and yers Range, nearly west. Reach upon the bearing of the gap wh e most distant range. The co ed we found splendidly open, be and it rose occasionally into some teen miles from the Turtle Back y-pans with water, where we turn for an hour. A mob of emus cam nd Mr. Tietkens shot one in a fleshy ck, which rather helped it to run ed instead of detaining, so that we Next some parallel ridges lying n were crossed, where some beef- ea trees, ornamented the scene, the

country again opening into beautiful grassy lav
One or two creek channels were crossed, an
larger one farther on, whose timber indeed w
scarcely reach our course; as it would not com
us, we went to it. The gum-timber upon it
thick and vigorous—it came from the north-
ward. A quantity of the so called tea-tree [M
leuca] grew here. In two miles up the channe
found where a low ridge crossed and formed a
of low pass. An old native well existed here, w
upon cleaning out with a quart pot, disclose
element of our search to our view at a dep
nearly five feet. The natives always make
wells of such an abominable shape, that of a f
never thinking how awkward they must be to
men with horses—some people are so unfeelin
took us a long time to water our three
There was a quantity of the little purple vetc
of which all animals are so fond, and which
fattening. There was plenty of this herb
Turtle Back, and wherever it grows it giv
country a lovely carnation tinge; this, b
with the bright green of the grass, and the
and other tinted hues of several kinds of
impresses on the whole region the appearan
garden.

In the morning, in consequence of a c
dewy night, the horses declined to drink. R
our yesterday's course, we continued for te
when we noticed that the nearest mount
from Ayers Range was now not more tha
miles away. It appeared red, bald, and
altitude; to our left was another mass of
turtle back, and we turned to search f

them. A small gum creek to
st was first visited and left in dis
rocks and hills we searched, we
: of water. We wasted the rest
ess search; Nature seemed to ha
: whatever to form any such thing
l we saw no place where the natives
g. We had been riding from morn
d we had neither found water nor
ntain. We returned to our last
ere the sand had all fallen into
d our last night's performance
o do over again.
horning I decided to send Mr.
e camp to bring the party here,
red mountain to search for water
hat a hearty supper would dem
d to be sadly economical. W
s the next morning we depart
e errand—Mr. Tietkens for the
ntain. I made a straight cours
or four miles found the coun
bby. At ten miles I came
native huts, which were of
l two-storied; by this I mean
tic, or cupboard recess. When
to these, I suppose they know
else get it out of the roots of trees-
ne thicker and thicker, and only at
he mountain be seen. At a spot
es had burnt the old grass, and
rich vegetation grew, I gave my
of an hour's rest, for he had come

twenty-two miles. The day was delightful; the thermometer registered only 76° in the shade. I had had a very poor breakfast, and now had an excellent appetite for all the dinner I could command, and I could not help thinking that there is a great deal of sound philosophy in the Chinese doctrine, That the seat of the mind and the intellect is situate in the stomach.

Starting again and gaining a rise in the dense ocean of scrub, I got a sight of the mountain, whose appearance was most wonderful; it seemed so rifted and riven, and had acres of bare red rock without a shrub or tree upon it. I next found myself under the shadow of a huge rock towering above me amidst the scrubs, but too hidden to perceive until I reached it. On ascending it I was much pleased to discover, at a mile and a half off, the gum timber of a creek which meandered through this wilderness. On gaining its banks I was disappointed to find that its channel was very flat and poorly defined, though the timber upon it was splendid. Elegant upright creamy stems supported their umbrageous tops whose roots must surely extend downwards to a moistened soil. On each bank of the creek was a strip of green and open ground, so richly grassed and so beautifully bedecked with flowers that it seemed like suddenly escaping from purgatory into paradise when emerging from the recesses of the scrubs on to the banks of this beautiful, I wish I might call it, stream.

Opposite to where I struck it stood an extraordinary hill or ridge, consisting of a huge red turtle back having a number of enormous red stones almost egg-shaped, traversing, or rather standing in

pon, its whole length like a line o
I could compare it to nothing els
s oolitic monster of the turtle kin
upon its back. A few cypress
the interstices of the rocks, givin
appearance. Hoping to find som
servoir of water, I rode over to
feature. Before reaching its foot
small piece of open, firm, grassy
eautifully variegated with grass
on, with a small bare piece of grou
with rain water lying on it. Th
xquisitely lovely it seemed as if on
eats were wanting, to prove that
out by the hand of man. But it w
e of one of Nature's freaks, in wh
ccessfully imitated her imitator,
y horse and left him to graze
spot, while I climbed the oolitic's
not sufficient water in the gar
es, and it was actually necessa
more, or else the region wou

from this hill was wild and stra
d forehead of the mountain was
iles away, the country between b
e creek came from the south—w
lost in the scrubs to the east of nor
gorous clump of eucalypts down th
ne first to visit them, but the chan
sly dry. Returning, I next went up
ame to a place where great boulders
l the bed, and where several large-
ed, but were now dry. Hard ly,

however, I found a damp spot, and near it in the sand a native well, not more than two feet deep and having water in it. Still farther up I found an overhanging rock, with a good pool of water at its foot, and I was now satisfied with my day's work. Here I camped. I made a fire at a large log lying in the creek bed; my horse was up to his eyes in most magnificent herbage, and I could not help envying him as I watched him devouring his food. I felt somewhat lonely, and cogitated that what has been written or said by cynics, solitaries, or Byrons, of the delights of loneliness, has no real home in the human heart. Nothing could appal the mind so much as the contemplation of eternal solitude. Well may another kind of poet exclaim, Oh, solitude! where are the charms that sages have seen in thy face? for human sympathy is one of the passions of human nature. Natives had been here very recently, and the scrubs were burning, not far off to the northwards, in the neighbourhood of the creek channel. As night descended, I lay down by my bright camp fire in peace to sleep, though doubtless there are very many of my readers who would scarcely like to do the same. Such a situation might naturally lead one to consider how many people have lain similarly down at night, in fancied security, to be awakened only by the enemies' tomahawk crashing through their skulls. Such thoughts if they intruded themselves upon my mind, were expelled by others that wandered away to different scenes and distant friends, for this Childe Harold also had a mother not forgot, and sisters whom he loved, but saw them not, ere yet his weary pilgrimage begun.

Dreams also, between sleeping and waking, passed swiftly through my brain, and in my lonely sleep I had real dreams, sweet, fanciful, and bright, mostly connected with the enterprise upon which I had embarked—dreams that I had wandered into, and was passing through, tracts of fabulously lovely glades, with groves and grottos green, watered by never-failing streams of crystal, dotted with clusters of magnificent palm-trees, of the fairest of having groves, charming groves, of the fairest of pines, of groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm."

"And all throughout the night there reigned the sense
Of waking dream, with luscious thoughts o'erladen;
Of joy too conscious made, and too intense,
By the swift advent of this longed-for aidenn."

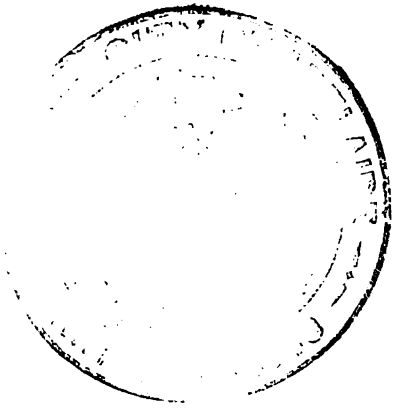
On awaking, however, I was forced to reflect, ow "mysterious are these laws! the vision's finer han the view: her landscape never draws fair as fancy drew." The Nature was cold, the ermometer stood at 28°, and morning now—

"The morn was up again, the dewy morn;
With breath all incense, and with cheek all bloom,
Laughing the clouds away with playful scorn,
And smiling, as if earth contained no tomb:
And glowing into day."

ith this charming extract from Byron for break-
l saddled my horse, having nothing more to
n me here, intending to bring up the whole
as soon as possible.
ow, however, returned by a more southerly
and found the scrubs less thick, and came to
ow red rises in them. Having travelled east-
turned on the bearing for the tea-tree creek,

where the party ought now to be. At six miles on this line I came upon some open ground, and saw several emus. This induced me to look around for water, and I found some clay-pans with enough water to last a week. I was very well pleased, as this would save time and trouble in digging at the tea-tree. The water here was certainly rather thick, and scarcely fit for human organisms, at least for white ones, though it might suit black ones well enough, and it was good enough for our horses, which was the greatest consideration. I rested my horse here for an hour, and then rode to the tea-tree. The party, however, were not there, and I waited in expectation of their arrival. In about an hour Mr. Tietkens came and informed me that on his return to the camp the other day he had found a nice little water, six miles from here, and where the party was, and to which we now rode together. At this agreeable little spot were the three essentials for an explorer's camp—that is to say, wood, water, and grass. From there we went to my clay pans, and the next day to my lonely camp of dreams. This, the 30th August, was an auspicious day in our travels, it being no less than Mr. Tietkens's nine-and-twentieth birthday. We celebrated it with what honours the expedition stores would afford, obtaining a flat bottle of spirits from the medical department, with which we drank to his health and many happier returns of the day. In honour of the occasion I called this Tietkens's Birthday Creek, and hereby proclaim it unto the nations that such should be its name for ever. The camp was not moved, but Mr. Tietkens and I rode over to the high mountain to-day, taking with us all the apparatus neces-

TIETKENS'S BIRTHDAY CREEK, AND MOUNT CARNARVON. [*Page* 168, *Vol. I.*



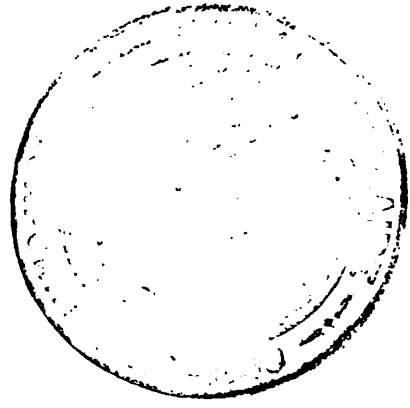
sary for so great an ascent—that is to say, thermometer, barometer, compass, field glasses, quart pot, water-bag, and matches. In about four miles we reached its foot, and found its sides so bare and steep that I took off my boots for the ascent. It was formed for the most part like a stupendous turtle back, of a conglomerate granite, with no signs of water, or any places that would retain it for a moment, round or near its base. Upon reaching its summit, the view was most extensive in every direction except the west, and though the horizon was bounded in all directions by ranges, yet scrubs filled the entire spaces between. To the north lay a long and very distant range, which I thought might be the Gill's Range of my last expedition, though it would certainly be a stretch either of imagination or vision, for that range was nearly 140 miles away.

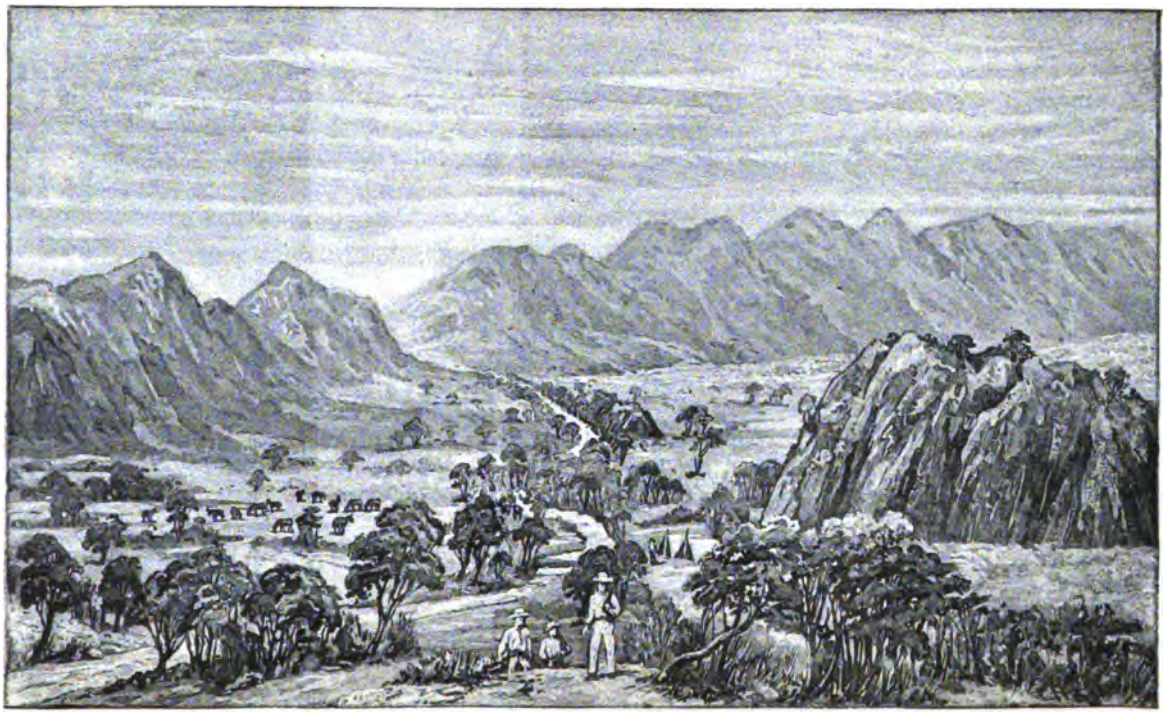
To the north-westward was a flat-topped hill, rising like a table from an ocean of scrub; it was very much higher than such hills usually are. This was Mount Conner. To the south, and at a considerable distance away, lay another range of some length, apparently also of considerable altitude. I called this the Everard Range. The horizon westward was bounded by a continuous mass of hills or mountains, from the centre of which Birthday Creek seemed to issue. Many of the mounts westward appeared of considerable elevation. The natives were burning the scrubs west and north-west. On the bare rocks of this mountain we saw several white, bleached snail-shells. I was grieved to find that my barometer had met with an accident in our climb; however, by testing the boiling point of water I obtained the altitude.

Water boiled at 206°, giving an elevation of 3085 feet above the level of the sea, it being about 1200 feet above the surrounding country. The view of Birthday Creek winding along in little bends through the scrubs from its parent mountains, was most pleasing. Down below us were some very pretty little scenes. One was a small sandy channel, like a plough furrow, with a few eucalyptus trees upon it, running from a ravine near the foot of this mount, which passed at about a mile through two red mounds of rock, only just wide enough apart to admit of its passage. A few cypress pines were growing close to the little gorge. On any other part of the earth's surface, if, indeed, such another place could be found, water must certainly exist also, but here there was none. We had a perfect bird's-eye view of the spot. We could only hope, for beauty and natural harmony's sake, that water must exist, at least below the surface, if not above. Having completed our survey, we descended barefooted as before.

On reaching the camp, Gibson and Jimmy had shot some parrots and other birds, which must have flown down the barrels of their guns, otherwise they never could have hit them, and we had an excellent supper of parrot soup. Just here we have only seen parrots, magpies, and a few pigeons, though plenty of kangaroo, wallaby, and emu; but have not succeeded in bagging any of the latter game, as they are exceedingly shy and difficult to approach, from being so continually hunted by the natives. I named this very singular feature Mount Carnarvon, or The Sentinel, as soon I found

"The mountain there did stand
T sentinel enchanted land."





ON BIRTHDAY CREEK. [*Page 171, Vol. I.*

The night was cold; mercury down to 26°. What little dew fell became frosted; there was not sufficient to call it frozen. I found my position here to be in latitude 26° 3′, longitude 132° 29′.

In the night of the 1st September, heavy clouds were flying fastly over us, and a few drops of rain fell at intervals. About ten o'clock P.M. I observed a lunar rainbow in the northern horizon; its diameter was only about fifteen degrees. There were no prismatic colours visible about it. To-day was clear, fine, but rather windy. We travelled up the creek, skirting its banks, but cutting off the bends. We had low ridges on our right. The creek came for some distance from the south-west, then more southerly, then at ten miles, more directly from the hills to the west. The country along its banks was excellent, and the scenery most beautiful—pine-clad, red, and rocky hills being scattered about in various directions, while further to the west and south-west the high, bold, and very rugged chain rose into peaks and points. We only travelled sixteen miles, and encamped close to a pretty little pine-clad hill, on the north bank of the creek, where some rocks traversed the bed, and we easily obtained a good supply of water. The grass and herbage being magnificent, the horses were in a fine way to enjoy themselves.

This spot is one of the most charming that even imagination could paint. In the background were the high and pointed peaks of the main chain, from which sloped a delightful green valley; through this the creek meandered, here and there winding round the foot of little pine-clad hills of unvarying red colour, whilst the earth from which they sprung

was covered with a carpet of verdure and vegetation of almost every imaginable hue. It was happiness to lie at ease upon such a carpet and gaze upon such a scene, and it was happiness the more ecstatic to know that I was the first of a civilised race of men who had ever beheld it. My visions of a former night really seemed to be prophetic. The trend of the creek, and the valley down which it came, was about 25° south of west. We soon found it became contracted by impinging hills. At ten miles from camp we found a pool of water in the bed. In about a couple of miles farther, to my surprise I found we had reached its head and its source, which was the drainage of a big hill. There was no more water and no rock-holes, neither was there any gorge. Some triodia grew on the hills, but none on the lower ground. The valley now changed into a charming amphitheatre. We had thus traced our Birthday Creek, to its own birthplace. It has a short course, but a merry one, and had ended for us at its proper beginning. As there appeared to be no water in the amphitheatre, we returned to the pool we had seen in the creek. Several small branch creeks running through pretty little valleys joined our creek to-day. We were now near some of the higher cones of the main chain, and could see that they were all entirely timberless, and that triodia grew upon their sides. The spot we were now encamped upon was another scene of exquisite sylvan beauty. We had now been a month in the field, as to-morrow was the 4th of September, and I could certainly congratulate myself upon the result of my first month's labour.

The night was cold and windy,
clouds hovered just above the moun
threatened a heavy downpour of
driving gale scattered them into the
space, and after sunrise we had a
sky. I intended this morning to pu
seemed now, as it had always seeme
moment I saw this range, a main
chain. Going north round a poin
soon in the trend of the pass;
reached the banks of a new creek,
into another, or else into a large
swamp, which had no apparent ou
timber, could be seen for two
Advancing till further, I soon di
were upon the reedy banks of a fa
whose murmuring waters, ever rus
heeded on, were now for the firs
the delighted eyes of their discove
Here I had found a spot where

"Shed o'er the scene her purest of crystal,

This was really a delightful disco
was of the best kind here—timbe
mountain In all my wanderin
of mil ustralia, I never sav
and anciful egion than this, and
white ma night live and be h
of a fo night were of a verit
graph cally speaking, we
almost upo the extreme head
ourse. Its trend here was n
ran through a

We saw several fine pools and ponds, where the reeds opened in the channel, and we flushed up and shot several lots of ducks. This creek and glen I have named respectively the Ferdinand and Glen Ferdinand, after the Christian name of Baron von Mueller.* The glen extended nearly five miles, and where it ended, the water ceased to show upon the surface. At the end of the glen we encamped, and I do not remember any day's work during my life which gave me more pleasure than this, for I trust it will be believed that—

"The proud desire of sowing broad the germs of lasting worth
Shall challenge give to scornful laugh of careless sons of earth;
Though mirth deride, the pilgrim feet that tread the desert plain,
The thought that cheers me onward is, I have not lived in vain."

After our dinner Mr. Tietkens and I ascended the highest mountain in the neighbourhood—several others not far away were higher, but this was the most convenient. Water boiled at its summit at 204°, which gives an altitude above sea level of 4131 feet, it being about 1500 feet above the surrounding country. I called this Mount Ferdinand, and another higher point nearly west of it I called Mount James-Winter.* The view all round from west to north was shut out. To the south and south-east other ranges existed. The timber of the Ferdinand could be traced for many miles in a southerly direction; it finally became lost in the distance in a timbered if not a scrubby country. This mountain was highly magnetic. I

* The names having a star against them in this book denote contributors to the fund raised by Baron Mueller* for this expedition.—E. G.

prised at seeing so few signs of nati
We returned to the camp and so
y cereals, fodder plants, and vegeta
uantity of tea-tree grew in this g
vas pure and fresh. farther down,
or three miles ; the configurati
between two hills ; the
ins now compelled me to take
y valley for my road. In a few mile
ek-channel came out of the range
us, near the foot of Mount James
oined a larger one, up which was
water ; this I called the Reid.*
rsing another very pretty valley
st, with fine cotton and salt-bu
resque cypress pines covered
des of us. Under some hills
our course was another creek, w
he grass and herbage being mos
is also was a very pretty place
nt was 26° 24′.
s, but away on horseback this morn
he started back on foot to say
proceeded with. We eventu
gap west, down the creek sou
excellent timber on it. The
the grass up the channel
Tietkens and I rode up in advance
we went nearly three miles, when
ning water. At the same time we
-bed a considerable number of
sed a most frightful outcry at our
pected advent amongst them. Those

nearest to us walked slowly into the reeds, rushes, tea-trees, and high salt bushes, but deliberately watching our every movement. While watering our horses a great many from the outskirts ran at us, poising and quivering their spears, some of which were over ten feet long; of these, every individual had an extraordinary number. When they saw us sitting quietly, but not comfortably, on our horses, which became very frightened and impatient, they renewed their horrible yells and gesticulations, some waving us away, others climbing trees, and directing their spears at us from the branches. Another lot on the opposite side of the creek now came rushing up with spears advanced and ensigns spread, and with their yells and cries encouraged those near to spear us. They seemed, however, to have some doubts of the nature or vulnerability of our horses. At the head of our new assailants was one sophisticated enough, but as we still remained immobile, he fellow, walk;" to be able to call out, "Walk, white induced some others to join in making a rush a us, and they hurled their jagged spears at us befor we could get out of the way. It was fortunat indeed that we were at the extreme distance th these weapons can be projected, for they struck t ground right amongst our horses' hoofs, maki them more restive than ever.

I now let our assailants see we were not quite helpless as they might have supposed. I unslip my rifle, and the bullet, going so suddenly betw two of these worthies and smashing some bo just behind them, produced silence amongst whole congregation, at least for a moment. this time we were anxiously awaiting the arri

y, as my instructions we
urn in a given time, they
us. But these valiant retain
they heard the firing, preferred t
harm's way, leaving us to kill or be
unes of war might determine; an
had to retreat from our sable enem
find our white friends. We got the
p, but the yelling of these fiends i
e clouds of smoke from the burnin
es, and the many disagreeable odo
large native village, and the yapp
f a lot of starving dogs, all comb
nd our horses exceedingly restless
mewhat overawed by the number
l though they crowded round f
or there were more than 200 o
and children being sent away o
first approach, they did not the
pears. I selected as open a p
could get for the camp, which, h
all, back from the water, and c
ot of a hill. When they saw b
believe they had previously r
our horses to form one animal,
d the horses, they proceeded prop
elves up for a regular onslaught.
ses remained close, they seemed di
ck, but when they were hobbled and
enemy made a grand sortie, rushing
t the back of the camp where they
d, towards us in a body with spears
d yelling their war cries.
e in imminent danger; we had out

all the firearms we could muster; these amount
to two rifles, two shot guns, and five revolvers.
watched with great keenness the motion of the
arms that gives the propulsion to their spears, a
the instant I observed that, I ordered a discharge
the two rifles and one gun, as it was no use wait
to be speared first. I delayed almost a second
long, for at the instant I gave the word sev
spears had left the enemy's hands, and it was
great good fortune we avoided them. Our shots, as
I had ordered, cut up the ground at their feet, and
sent the sand and gravel into their eyes and faces;
this and the noise of the discharge made the great
body of them pause. Availing ourselves of this
interval, we ran to attack them, firing our revolvers
in quick succession as we ran. This, with the noise
and the to them extraordinary phenomenon of a
projectile approaching them which they could not
see, drove them up into the hills from which they
had approached us, and they were quiet for nearly
an hour, except for their unceasing howls and yells,
during which time we made an attempt at getting
some dinner. That meal, however, was not com
pleted when we saw them stealing down on u
again. Again they came more than a hundre
strong, with heads held back, and arms at fulles
tension to give their spears the greatest projectiv
force, when, just as they came within spear shot
for we knew the exact distance now, we gave them
another volley, striking the sand up just before their
feet; again they halted, consulting one another by
looks and signs, when the discharge of Gibson's
gun, with two long-distance cartridges, decide
them, and they ran back, but only to come again

consequence of our not shooting any of them, began to jeer and laugh at us, slapping their ides at and jumping about in front of us, and ntly daring and deriding us. These were ly some of those lewd fellows of the baser cts xvii. 5).

ere at length compelled to send some rifle nto such close proximity to some of their at at last they really did believe we were s folk after all. Towards night their ceased, and though they camped just on te side of the creek, they did not trouble ore. Of course we kept a pretty sharp ng the night. The men of this nation g, and exceedingly hirsute, and in excel- ondition. They reminded me of, as no re, the prototypes of the account given es of the Charlotte Waters telegraph y first expedition, who declared that t were tribes of wild blacks who were were covered with hair, and had long down their backs.

e men, who perhaps were only the ribe, were either old or grey-haired, eir features in general were not of the younger ones' faces were ome of them wore the chignon, rls; the youngest ones who wore istance like women. A number red ochre, and some were in ith feathered crowns and head anklets of feathers, and having ed and white upon the upper dies; the majority of course

were in undress uniform. I knew as soon as I arrived in this region that it must be well if not densely populated, for it is next to impossible in Australia for an explorer to discover excellent and well-watered regions without coming into deadly conflict with the aboriginal inhabitants. The aborigines are always the aggressors, but then the white man is a trespasser in the first instance, which is a cause sufficient for any atrocity to be committed upon him. I named this encounter creek The Officer.* There was a high mount to the north-east from here, which lay nearly west from Mount James-Winter, which I called Mount Officer.*

Though there was a sound of revelry or devilry by night in the enemy's camp, ours was not passed in music, and we could not therefore listen to the low harmonics that undertone sweet music's roll. Gibson got one of the horses which was in sight, to go and find the others, while Mr. Tietkens took Jimmy with him to the top of a hill in order to take some bearings for me, while I remained at the camp. No sooner did the natives see me alone than they recommenced their malpractices. I had my arsenal in pretty good fighting order, and determined, if they persisted in attacking me, to let some of them know the consequences. I was afraid that some might spear me from behind while others engaged me in front. I therefore had to be doubly on the alert. A mob of them came, and I fired in the air, then on the ground, at one side of them and then at the other. At last they fell back, and when the others and the horses appeared, though they kept close round us, watching every movement, yelling perpetually, they desisted from further

attack. I was very gratified to think afterwards that no blood had been shed, and that we had got rid of our enemies with only the loss of a little ammunition. Although this was Sunday, I did not feel quite so safe as if I were in a church or chapel, and I determined not to remain. The horses were frightened at the incessant and discordant yells and shrieks of these fiends, and our ears also were perfectly deafened with their outcries.

We departed, leaving the aboriginal owners of this splendid piece of land in the peaceful possession of their beautiful hunting grounds, and travelled west through a small gap into a fine valley. The main range continued stretching away north of us in high and heavy masses of hills, and with a fine open country to the south. At ten miles we came to another fine creek, where I found water running; this I called the Currie.* It was late when, in six miles further, we reached another creek, where we got water and a delightful camp. I called this the Levinger.* The country to-day was excellent, being fine open, grassy valleys all the way; all along our route in this range we saw great quantities of white snail-shells, in heaps, at old native encampments, and generally close to their fireplaces. In crevices and under rocks we found plenty of the living snails, large and brown; it was evident the natives cook and eat them, the shells turning white in the fire, also by exposure to the sun. On starting again we travelled about west-north-west, and we passed through a piece of timbered country; at twelve miles we arrived at another fine watercourse. The horses were almost unmanageable with flashness, running about with

their mouths full of the rich herbage, kicking up their heels and biting at one another, in a perfect state of horse-play. It was almost laughable to see them, with such heavy packs on their backs, attempting such elephantine gambols; so I kept them going, to steady them a bit. The creek here I called Winter* Water. At five miles farther we passed a very high mountain in the range, which appeared the highest I had seen; I named it Mount Davenport. We next passed through a small gap, over a low hill, and immediately on our appearance we heard the yells and outcries of natives down on a small flat below. All we saw, however, was a small, and I hope happy, family, consisting of two men, one woman, and another youthful individual, but whether male or female I was not sufficiently near to determine. When they saw us descend from the little hill, they very quickly walked away, like respectable people. Continuing our course in nearly the same direction, west-north-west, and passing two little creeks, I climbed a small hill and saw a most beautiful valley about a mile away, stretching north-west, with eucalyptus or gum timber up at the head of it. The valley appeared entirely enclosed by hills, and was a most enticing sight. Travelling on through 200 or 300 yards of mulga, we came out on the open ground, which was really a sight that would delight the eyes of a traveller, even in the Province of Cashmere or any other region of the earth. The ground was covered with a rich carpet of grass and herbage; conspicuous amongst the latter was an abundance of the little purple vetch, which, spreading over thousands of acres of ground, gave a lovely

pink or magenta tinge to the whole scene. I also saw that there was another valley running nearly north, with another creek meandering through it, apparently joining the one first seen.

Passing across this fairy space, I noticed the whitish appearances that usually accompany springs and flood-marks in this region. We soon reached a most splendid kind of stone trough, under a little stony bank, which formed an excellent spring, running into and filling the little trough, running out at the lower end, disappearing below the surface, evidently perfectly satisfied with the duties it had to perform.

This was really the most delightful spot I ever saw; a region like a garden, with springs of the purest water spouting out of the ground, ever flowing into a charming little basin a hundred yards long by twenty feet wide and four feet deep. There was a quantity of the tea-tree bush growing along the various channels, which all contained running water.

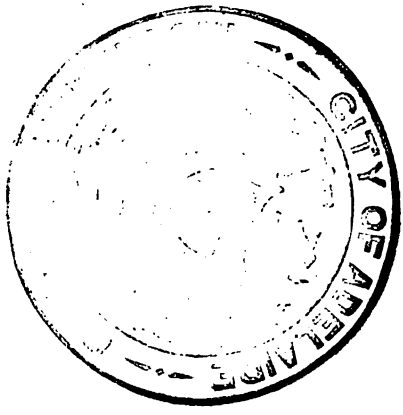
The valley is surrounded by picturesque hills, and I am certain it is the most charming and romantic spot I ever shall behold. I immediately christened it the Fairies' Glen, for it had all the characteristics to my mind of fairyland. Here we encamped. I would not have missed finding such a spot, upon—I will not say what consideration. Here also of course we saw numbers of both ancient and modern native huts, and this is no doubt an old-established and favourite camping ground. And how could it be otherwise? No creatures of the human race could view these scenes with apathy or dislike, nor would any sentient beings

part with such a patrimony at any price but that of their blood. But the great Designer of the universe, in the long past periods of creation, permitted a fiat to be recorded, that the beings whom it was His pleasure in the first instance to place amidst these lovely scenes, must eventually be swept from the face of the earth by others more intellectual, more dearly beloved and gifted than they. Progressive improvement is undoubtedly the order of creation, and we perhaps in our turn may be as ruthlessly driven from the earth by another race of yet unknown beings, of an order infinitely higher, infinitely more beloved, than we. On me, perchance, the eternal obloquy of the execution of God's doom may rest, for being the first to lead the way, with prying eye and trespassing foot, into regions so fair and so remote; but being guiltless alike in act or intention to shed the blood of any human creature, I must accept it without a sigh.

The night here was cold, the mercury at daylight being down to 24°, and there was ice on the water or tea left in the pannikins or billies overnight.

This place was so charming that I could not tear myself away. Mr. Tietkens and I walked to and climbed up a high mount, about three miles north-easterly from camp; it was of some elevation. We ascended by a gorge having eucalyptus and callitris pines halfway up. We found water running from one little basin to another, and high up, near the summit, was a bare rock over which water was gushing. To us, as we climbed towards it, it appeared like a monstrous diamond hung in mid-air, flashing back the rays of the morning sun. I called this Mount Oberon, after Shakespeare's King of

THE FAIRIES' GLEN. [*Page* 184, *Vol. I.*



the Fairies. The view from its summit was limited. To the west the hills of this chain still run on; to the east I could see Mount Ferdinand. The valley in which the camp and water was situate lay in all its loveliness at our feet, and the little natural trough in its centre, now reduced in size by distance, looked like a silver thread, or, indeed, it appeared more as though Titania, the Queen of the Fairies, had for a moment laid her magic silver wand upon the grass, and was reposing in the sunlight among the herbage and the flowers. The day was lovely, the sky serene and clear, and a gentle zephyr-like breeze merely agitated the atmosphere. As we sat gazing over this delightful scene, and having found also so many lovely spots in this chain of mountains, I was tempted to believe I had discovered regions which might eventually support, not only flocks and herds, but which would become the centres of population also, each individual amongst whom would envy me as being the first discoverer of the scenes it so delighted them to view. For here were—

> "Long dreamy lawns, and birds on happy wings
> Keeping their homes in never-rifled bowers;
> Cool fountains filling with their murmurings
> The sunny silence 'twixt the charming hours."

In the afternoon we returned to the camp, and again and again wondered at the singular manner in which the water existed here. Five hundred yards above or below there is no sign of water, but in that intermediate space a stream gushes out of the ground, fills a splendid little trough, and gushes into the ground again: emblematic indeed of the ephemeral existence of humanity—we rise out of the

dust, flash for a brief moment in the light of life, and in another we are gone. We planted seeds here; I called it Titania's Spring, the watercourse in which it exists I called Moffatt's* Creek.

The night was totally different from the former, the mercury not falling below 66°. The horses upon being brought up to the camp this morning on foot, displayed such abominable liveliness and flashness, that there was no catching them. One colt, Blackie, who was the leader of the riot, I just managed at length to catch, and then we had to drive the others several times round the camp at a gallop, before their exuberance had in a measure subsided. It seemed, indeed, as if the fairies had been bewitching them during the night. It was late when we left the lovely spot. A pretty valley running north-west, with a creek in it, was our next road; our track wound about through the most splendidly grassed valleys, mostly having a trend westerly. At twelve miles we saw the gum timber of a watercourse, apparently debouching through a glen. Of course there was water, and a channel filled with reeds, down which the current ran in never-failing streams. This spot was another of those charming gems which exist in such numbers in this chain. This was another of those "secret nooks in a pleasant land, by the frolic fairies planned." I called the place Glen Watson.* From a hill near I discovered that this chain had now become broken, and though it continues to run on still farther west, it seemed as though it would shortly end. The Mount Olga of my former expedition was now in view, and bore north 17° west, a considerable distance away. I was most anxious to

visit it. On my former journey I had made many endeavours to reach it, but was prevented; now, however, I hoped no obstacle would occur, and I shall travel towards it to-morrow. There was more than a mile of running water here, the horses were up to their eyes in the most luxuriant vegetation, and our encampment was again in a most romantic spot. Ah! why should regions so lovely be traversed so soon? This chain of mountains is called the Musgrave Range. A heavy dew fell last night, produced, I imagine, by the moisture in the glen, and not by extraneous atmospheric causes, as we have had none for some nights previously.

CHAPTER III.

FROM 10TH SEPTEMBER TO 30TH SEPTEMBER, 1873.

Leave for Mount Olga—Change of scene—Desert oak-trees—The Mann range—Fraser's Wells—Mount Olga's foot—Gosse's expedition—Marvellous mountain—Running water—Black and gold butterflies—Rocky bath—Ayers' Rock—Appearance of Mount Olga—Irritans camp—Sugar-loaf Hill—Collect plants—Peaches—A patch of better country—A new creek and glen—Heat and cold—A pellucid pond—Zoe's Glen—Christy Bagot's Creek—Stewed ducks—A lake—Hector's Springs and Pass—Lake Wilson—Stevenson's Creek—Milk thistles—Beautiful amphitheatre—A carpet of verdure—Green swamp—Smell of camels—How I found Livingstone—Gabriel Daniel Fahrenheit—Cotton and salt bush flats—The Champ de Mars—Sheets of water—Peculiar tree—Pleasing scene—Harriet's Springs—Water in grass—Ants and burrs—Mount Aloysius—Across the border—The Bell Rock.

We left this pretty glen with its purling stream and reedy bed, and entered very shortly upon an entirely different country, covered with porcupine grass. We went north-west to some ridges at seventeen miles, where there was excellent vegetation, but no water. I noticed to-day for the first time upon this expedition some of the desert oak trees (Casuarina Decaisneana). Nine miles farther we reached a round hill, from which Mount Olga bore north. We were still a considerable distance away, and as I did not know of any water existing at Mount Olga, I was anxious to find some,

for the horses had none where we encamped last night. From this hill I could also see that the Musgrave chain still ran on to the west; though broken and parted in masses, it rose again into high mounts and points. This continuation is called the Mann Range. Near the foot of the round hill I saw a small flat piece of rock, barely perceptible among the grass; on it was an old native fireplace and a few dead sticks. On inspection there proved to be two fine little holes or basins in the solid rock, with ample water for all my horses. Scrub and triodia existed in the neighbourhood, and the feed was very poor. These were called Fraser's Wells. Mount Olga was still fifty miles away. We now pushed on for it over some stony and some scrubby country, and had to camp without water and with wretched feed for the horses. Casuarina trees were often passed. We generally managed to get away early from a bad camp, and by the middle of the next day we arrived at the foot of Mount Olga. Here I perceived the marks of a wagon and horses, and camel tracks; these I knew at once to be those of Gosse's expedition. Gosse had come down south through the regions, and to the watering places which I discovered in my former journey. He had evidently gone south to the Mann range, and I expected soon to overtake him. I had now travelled four hundred miles to reach this mount, which, when I first saw it, was only seventy-five or eighty miles distant.

The appearance of this mountain is marvellous in the extreme, and baffles an accurate description. I shall refer to it again, and may remark here that it is formed of several vast and solid, huge, and

rounded blocks of bare red conglomerate stones, being composed of untold masses of rounded stones of all kinds and sizes, mixed like plums in a pudding, and set in vast and rounded shapes upon the ground. Water was running from the base, down a stony channel, filling several rocky basins. The water disappeared in the sandy bed of the creek, where the solid rock ended. We saw several quandongs, or native peach-trees, and some native poplars on our march to-day. I made an attempt to climb a portion of this singular mound, but the sides were too perpendicular; I could only get up about 800 or 900 feet, on the front or lesser mound; but without kites and ropes, or projectiles, or wings, or balloons, the main summit is unscaleable. The quandong fruit here was splendid—we dried a quantity in the sun. Some very beautiful black and gold butterflies, with very large wings, were seen here and collected. The thermometer to-day was 95° in the shade. We enjoyed a most luxurious bath in the rocky basins. We moved the camp to softer ground, where there was a well-grassed flat a mile and a half away. To the east was a high and solitary mound, mentioned in my first journal as ranges to the east of Mount Olga, and apparently lying north and south; this is called Ayers' Rock; I shall have to speak of it farther on. To the west-south-west were some pointed ridges, with the long extent of the Mann Ranges lying east and west, far beyond them to the south.

The appearance of Mount Olga from this camp is truly wonderful; it displayed to our astonished eyes rounded minarets, giant cupolas, and monstrous

domes. There they have stood as huge memorials of the ancient times of earth, for ages, countless eons of ages, since its creation first had birth. The rocks are smoothed with the attrition of the alchemy of years. Time, the old, the dim magician, has ineffectually laboured here, although with all the powers of ocean at his command; Mount Olga has remained as it was born; doubtless by the agency of submarine commotion of former days, beyond even the epoch of far-back history's phantom dream. From this encampment I can only liken Mount Olga to several enormous rotund or rather elliptical shapes of rouge mange, which had been placed beside one another by some extraordinary freak or convulsion of Nature. I found two other running brooks, one on the west and one on the north side. My first encampment was on the south. The position of this extraordinary feature is in latitude 25° 20′ and longitude 130° 57′.

Leaving the mountain, we next traversed a region of sandy soil, rising into sandhills, with patches of level ground between. There were casuarinas and triodia in profusion—two different kinds of vegetation which appear to thoroughly enjoy one another's company. We went to the hills south-south-westerly, and had a waterless camp in the porcupine, triodia, spinifex, Festuca irritans, and everything-else-abominable, grass; 95° in shade. At about thirty-two miles from Mount Olga we came to the foot of the hills, and I found a small supply of water by digging; but at daylight next morning there was not sufficient for half the horses, so I rode away to look for more; this I found in a channel coming from a sugar-loaf or high-

peaked hill. It was a terribly rough and rocky place, and it was too late to get the animals up to the ledges where the water was, and they had to wait till next day.

From here I decided to steer for a notch in the Mann Range, nearly south-west. The country consisted chiefly of sandhills, with casuarina and flats with triodia. We could get no water by night. I collected a great quantity of various plants and flowers along all the way I had come in fact, but just about Mount Olga I fancied I had discovered several new species. To-day we passed through some mallee, and gathered quandongs or native peach, which, with sugar, makes excellent jam; we also saw currajongs and native poplars. We now turned to some ridges a few miles nearer than the main range, and dug a tank, for the horses badly wanted water. A very small quantity drained in, and the animals had to go a second night unwatered. It was now the 22nd of September, and I had hoped to have some rain at the equinox, but none had yet fallen. The last two days have been very warm and oppressive. The country round these ridges was very good, and plenty of the little purple vetch grew here. The tank in the morning was quite full; it however watered only seventeen horses, but by twelve o'clock all were satisfied, and we left the tank for the benefit of those whom it might concern.

We were steering for an enticing-looking glen between two high hills about south-south-west. We passed over sandhills, through scrubs, and eventually on to open ground. At two or three miles from the new range we crossed a kind of dry swamp or water flat, being the end of a gum creek.

A creek was seen to issue from the glen as we approached, and at twelve miles from our last camp we came upon running water in the three channels which existed. The day was warm, 94°. The water was slightly brackish. Heat and cold are evidently relative perceptions, for this morning,

ZOE'S GLEN.

although the thermometer stood at 58°, I felt the atmosphere exceedingly cold. We took a walk up the glen whence the creek flows, and on to some hills which environ it. The water was rushing rapidly down the glen; we found several fine rock-

basins—one in particular was nine or ten feet deep, the pellucid element descending into it from a small cascade of the rocks above; this was the largest sheet of water per se I had yet discovered upon this expedition. It formed a most picturesque and delightful bath, and as we plunged into its transparent depths we revelled, as it were, in an almost newly discovered element. I called this charming spot Zoe's Glen. In our wanderings up the glen we had found books in the running brooks, and sermons in stones. The latitude of this pretty little retreat was 25° 59′. I rode a mile or two to the east to inspect another creek; its bed was larger than ours, and water was running down its channel. I called it Christy Bagot's Creek. I flushed up a lot of ducks, but had no gun. On my return Gibson and Jimmy took the guns, and walked over on a shooting excursion; only three ducks were shot; of these we made an excellent stew. A strong gale of warm wind blew from the south all night. Leaving Zoe's Glen, we travelled along the foot of the range to the south of us; at six or seven miles I observed a kind of valley dividing this range running south, and turned down into it. It was at first scrubby, then opened out. At four miles Mr. Tietkens and I mounted a rocky rise, and he, being ahead, first saw and informed me that there was a lake below us, two or three miles away. I was very much gratified to see it, and we immediately proceeded towards it. The valley or pass had now become somewhat choked with low pine-clad stony hills, and we next came upon a running creek with some fine little sheets of water; it meandered round the piny hills and exhausted

itself upon the bosom of the lake. I called these the Hector Springs and Hector Pass after Hector Wilson.* On arrival at the lake I found its waters were slightly brackish; there was no timber on its shores; it lay close under the foot of the mountains, having their rocky slopes for its northern bank. The opposite shore was sandy; numerous ducks and other water-fowl were floating on its breast. Several springs from the ranges ran into its northern shore, and on its eastern side a large creek ran in, though its timber did not grow all the way. The water was now eight or nine miles round; it was of an oblong form, whose greatest length is east and west. When quite full this basin must be at least twenty miles in circumference; I named this fine sheet of water Lake Wilson.* The position of this lake I made out to be in longitude 129° 52′. A disagreeable warm wind blew all day.

The morning was oppressive, the warm south wind still blowing. We left Lake Wilson, named after Sir Samuel, who was the largest contributor to this expedition fund, in its wildness, its loneliness, and its beauty, at the foot of its native mountains, and went away to some low hills south-south-west, where in nine miles we got some water in a channel I called Stevenson's* Creek. In a few miles further we found ourselves in a kind of glen where water bubbled up from the ground below. The channel had become filled with reeds, and great quantities of enormous milk or sow thistle (Sonchus oleraceous). Some of the horses got bogged in this ravine, which caused considerable delay. Eventually it brought us out into a most beautiful amphitheatre, into which

several creeks descended. This open space was covered with the richest carpet of verdure, and was a most enchanting spot. It was nearly three miles across; we went over to its southern side, and camped under the hills which fenced it there, and among them we obtained a supply of water. The grass and herbage here were magnificent. The only opening to this beautiful oval was some distance to the east; we therefore climbed over the hills to the south to get away, and came upon another fine valley running westward, with a continuous line of hills running parallel to it on the north. We made a meandering course, in a south-westerly direction, for about fifteen miles, when the hills became low and isolated, and gave but a poor look out for water. Other hills in a more continuous line bore to the north of west, to which we went. In three miles after this we came to a valley with a green swamp in the middle; it was too boggy to allow horses to approach. A round hill in another valley was reached late, and here our pack-horses, being driven in a mob in front of us, put their noses to the ground and seemed to have smelt something unusual, which proved to be Mr. Gosse's dray track. Our horses were smelling the scent of his camels from afar. The dray track was now comparatively fresh, and I had motives for following it. It was so late we had to encamp without finding the water, which I was quite sure was not far from us, and we turned out our horses hoping they might discover it in the night.

I went to sleep that night dreaming how I had met Mr. Gosse in this wilderness, and produced a parody upon 'How I found Livingstone.' We

travelled nearly thirty miles to-day upon all courses, the country passed over being principally very fine valleys, richly clothed with grass and almost every other kind of valuable herbage. Yesterday, the 28th of September, was rather a warm day; I speak by the card, for at ten o'clock at night Herr Gabriel Daniel Fahrenheit had not condescended to fall below 82°. The horses found water in the night, and in the morning looked sleek and full. I intended now, as I said before, to follow Gosse's dray track, for I knew he could not be very far in advance.

We followed the track a mile, when it turned suddenly to the south-west, down a valley with a creek in it that lay in that direction. But as a more leading one ran also in a more westerly direction, I left the dray track almost at right angles, and proceeded along the more westerly line. The valley I now traversed became somewhat scrubby with mallee and triodia. In seven or eight miles we got into much better country, lightly timbered with mulga and splendidly grassed. Here also were some cotton and salt bush flats. To my English reader I may say that these shrubs, or plants, or bushes are the most valuable fodder plants for stock known in Australia; they are varieties of the Atriplex family of plants, and whenever I can record meeting them, I do it with the greatest satisfaction. At twelve miles the hills to our north receded, and there lay stretched out before us a most beautiful plain, level as a billiard table and green as an emerald. Viewing it from the top of a hill, I could not help thinking what a glorious spot this would make for the display

of cavalry manœuvres. In my mental eye I could see

> "The rush of squadrons sweeping,
> Like whirlwinds o'er the plain;"

and mentally hear

> "The shouting of the slayers,
> The screeching of the slain."

I called this splendid circle the Champ de Mars; it is, I dare say, fifteen or sixteen miles round. The hills on the northern side were much higher than those near us, and appeared more inviting for water; so we rode across the circle to them. In a kind of gully between the hills, at four and a half miles, I found a rock-hole full of water in a triodia creek; it was seven or eight feet deep, and almost hidden amongst rocks and scrubs. The water drained into the hole from above. By the time my horses were all satisfied they had lowered it very considerably, and I did not think there would be a drink for them all in the morning; but when we took them up next day I found the rocky basin had been replenished during the night.

A valley led away from here, along the foot of the northern hills, almost west. At five miles we crossed the channel of a fine little creek, coming from thence; it had several sheets of water with rocky banks, and there were numerous ducks on the waters. The timber upon this creek was mostly blood-wood or red gum; the blood-wood has now almost entirely supplanted the other eucalypts. There was another tree of a very peculiar leaf which I have often met before, but only as a bush; here it had assumed the proportions of a tree.

This was one of the desert acacias, but which of them I could not tell. Farther on were several bare red hills, festooned with cypress pines, which always give a most pleasing tone to any Australian view. These I called Harriet's Springs. The creek meandered away down the valley amongst pine-clad hills to the south-westward, and appeared to increase in size below where we crossed it.

I ascended a hill and saw that the two lines of hills encircling the Champ de Mars had now entirely separated, the space between becoming gradually broader.

A pointed hill at the far end of the southern line bore west, and we started away for it. We continued on this west course for fifteen or sixteen miles, having the southern hills very close to our line of march. Having travelled some twenty miles, I turned up a blind gully or water-channel in a small triodia valley, and found some water lying about amongst the grass. The herbage here was splendid. Ants and burrs were very annoying, however; we have been afflicted with both of these animal and vegetable annoyances upon many occasions all through these regions. There was a high, black-looking mountain with a conical summit, in the northern line of ranges, which bore north-westward from here. I named it Mount Aloysius, after the Christian name of Sir A. F. Weld, Governor of Western Australia. We had entered the territory of the Colony of Western Australia on the last day of September; the boundary between it and South Australia being the 129th meridian of east longitude. The latitude by stars of this camp was 26° 9′. Leaving it early, we continued

upon the same line as yesterday, and towards the same hill, which we reached in five miles, and ascended. It was nearly the most westerly point of the line of hills we had been following. The summit of this hill I found to consist of great masses of rifted stone, which were either solid iron or stone coated thickly with it. The blocks rang with the sound of my iron-shod boots, while moving over them, with such a musical intonation and bell-like clang, that I called this the Bell Rock. Mount Aloysius bore north 9° west, distant about ten miles; here I saw it was quite an isolated range, as, at its eastern and western extremities, open spaces could be seen between it and any other hills.

CHAPTER IV.

FROM 30TH SEPTEMBER TO 9TH NOVEMBER, 1873.

Native encampment—Fires alight—Hogarth's Wells—Mount Marie and Mount Jeanie—Pointed ranges to the west—Chop a passage—Traces of volcanic action—Highly magnetic hills—The Leipoa ocellata—Tapping pits—Glen Osborne—Cotton-bush flats—Frowning bastion walls—Fort Mueller—A strong running stream—Natives' smokes—Gosse returning—Limestone formation—Native pheasants' nests—Egg-carrying—Mount Squires—The Mus conditor's nest—Difficulty with the horses—A small creek and native well—Steer for the west—Night work—Very desolate places—A circular storm—The Shoeing Camp—A bare hill—The Cups—Fresh-looking creek—Brine and bitter water—The desert pea—Jimmy and the natives—Natives prowling at night—Searching for water—Horses suffering from thirst—Horseflesh—The Cob—The camp on fire—Men and horses choking for water—Abandon the place—Displeasing view—Native signs—Another cup—Thermometer 106°—Return to the Cob—Old dry well—A junction from the east—Green rushes——Another waterless camp—Return to the Shoeing Camp—Intense cold—Biting dogs' noses—A nasal organ—Boiling an egg—Tietkens and Gibson return unsuccessful—Another attempt west—Country burnt by natives.

We had now been travelling along the northern foot of the more southerly of the two lines of hills which separated, at the west end of the Champ de Mars; and on reaching the Bell Rock, this southern line ceased, while the northern one still ran on, though at diminished elevation, and we now

travelled towards two hills standing together about west-north-west. On reaching them, in thirteen miles, I found a native encampment; there were several old and new bough gunyahs, and the fires were alight at the doors ? of many of them. We could not see the people because they hid themselves, but I knew quite well they were watching us close by. There was a large bare slab of rock, in which existed two fine cisterns several feet in depth, one much longer than the other, the small one containing quite a sufficient supply for all my horses. I called these Hogarth's Wells, and the two hills Mount Marie and Mount Jeanie. I was compelled to leave one of these receptacles empty, which for ages the simple inhabitants of these regions had probably never seen dry before. Some hills lay south-westerly, and we reached them in nine miles; they were waterless. Southward the country appeared all scrub. The western horizon was broken by ranges with some high points amongst them; they were a long way off. To the west-north-west some bald ranges also ran on. I made across to them, steering for a fall or broken gap to the north-north-west. This was a kind of glen, and I found a watercourse in it, with a great quantity of tea-tree, which completely choked up the passage with good-sized trees, whose limbs and branches were so interwoven that they prevented any animal larger than a man from approaching the water, bubbling along at their feet. We had to chop a passage to it for our horses. The hills were quite destitute of timber, and were composed of huge masses of rifted granite, which could only have been so riven by seismatic action, which at

one time must have been exceedingly frequent in this region.

I may mention that, from the western half of the Musgrave Range, all the Mann, the Tomkinson, and other ranges westward have been shivered into fragments by volcanic force. Most of the higher points of all the former and latter consist of frowning masses of black-looking or intensely red ironstone, or granite thickly coated with iron. Triodia grows as far up the sides of the hills as it is possible to obtain any soil; but even this infernal grass cannot exist on solid rock; therefore all the summits of these hills are bare. These shivered masses of stone have large interstices amongst them, which are the homes, dens, or resorts of swarms of a peculiar marsupial known as the rock wallaby, which come down on to the lower grounds at night to feed. If they expose themselves in the day, they are the prey of aborigines and eagles, if at night, they fall victims to wild dogs or dingos. The rocks frequently change their contours from earthquake shocks, and great numbers of these creatures are crushed and smashed by the trembling rocks, so that these unfortunate creatures, beset by so many dangers, exist always in a chronic state of fear and anxiety, and almost perpetual motion. These hills also have the metallic clang of the Bell Rock, and are highly magnetic. In the scrubs to-day Gibson found a lowan's or scrub pheasant's nest. These birds inhabit the most waterless regions and the densest scrubs, and live entirely without water.

This bird is figured in Gould's work on Australian ornithology; it is called the Leipoa ocellata. Two specimens of these birds are preserved in the

Natural History Department of the British Museum at Kensington. We obtained six fresh eggs from it. I found another, and got five more. We saw several native huts in the scrubs, some of them of large dimensions, having limbs of the largest trees they could get to build them with. When living here, the natives probably obtain water from roots of the mulga. This must be the case, for we often see small circular pits dug at the foot of some of these trees, which, however, generally die after the operation of tapping. I called the spot Glen Osborne; * we rested here a day. We always have a great deal of sewing and repairing of the canvas pack-bags to do, and a day of rest usually means a good day's work; it rests the horses, however, and that is the main thing. Saturday night, the 4th October, was a delightfully cool one, and on Sunday we started for some hills in a south-westerly direction, passing some low ridges. We reached the higher ones in twenty-two miles. Nearing them, we passed over some fine cotton-bush flats, so-called from bearing a small cotton-like pod, and immediately at the hills we camped on a piece of plain, very beautifully grassed, and at times liable to inundation. It was late when we arrived; no water could be found; but the day was cool, and the night promised to be so too; and as I felt sure I should get water in these hills in the morning, I was not very anxious on account of the horses. These hills are similar to those lately described, being greatly impregnated with iron and having vast upheavals of iron-coated granite, broken and lying in masses of black and pointed rock, upon all their summits. Their sides sloped somewhat

abruptly, they were all high
the appearance of frowning
walls. Very early I climbed
the top I saw the place tha
our refuge, though it was a d
called the Cavanagh Range
it as my depot, it was called
always refer to it by that n
a strong running stream in a
glen, and smokes from nativ
ing the horses, we had t
ground than I had climbe
found another stream in an
horses, and did not then go
was fine open, grassy coun
we followed the creek do
reach ng the lower
On Mr. Gosse dray-track ag
prised to e that the w
its outgoin track, and the
eastwards South Austra
anticipated meeting him
east, and west, I did n
rwards, round
the channel
d found this
face-water, we
he sandy creek
his region is,
bcky foundatio
open and an
though a fine
yards abov
the last tw

Shortly af
digging is
whole
the
the valley

position here to be in latitude 26° 12′, longitude 127° 59′ 0″.

Leaving this encampment, we struck away for a new line of ranges. The country was very peculiar, and different from any we had yet met; it was open, covered with tall triodia, and consisted almost entirely of limestone. At intervals, eucalyptus-trees of the mallee kind, and a few of the pretty-looking blood-wood-trees and some native poplars were seen; there was no grass for several miles, and we only found some poor dry stuff for the horses in a patch of scrub, the ground all round being stony and triodia-set. To-day we came upon three lowans' or native pheasants' nests. These birds, which somewhat resemble guinea-fowl in appearance, build extraordinarily large nests of sand, in which they deposit small sticks and leaves; here the female lays about a dozen eggs, the decomposition of the vegetable matter providing the warmth necessary to hatch them. These nests are found only in thick scrubs. I have known them five to six feet high, of a circular conical shape, and a hundred feet round the base. The first, though of enormous size, produced only two eggs; the second, four, and the third, six. We thanked Providence for supplying us with such luxuries in such a wilderness. There are much easier feats to perform than the carrying of lowans' eggs, and for the benefit of any readers who don't know what those eggs are like, I may mention that they are larger than a goose egg, and of a more delicious flavour than any other egg in the world. Their shell is beautifully pink tinted, and so terribly fragile that, if a person is not careful in lifting them, the fingers will crunch through the

tinted shell in an instant. Therefore, carrying a dozen of such eggs is no easy matter. I took upon myself the responsibility of bringing our prize safe into camp, and I accomplished the task by packing them in grass, tied up in a handkerchief, and slung round my neck; a fine fardel hanging on my chest, immediately under my chin. A photograph of a person with such an appendage would scarcely lead to recognition. We used some of the eggs in our tea as a substitute for milk. A few of the eggs proved to possess some slight germs of vitality, the preliminary process being the formation of eyes. But explorers in the field are not such particular mortals as to stand upon such trifles; indeed, parboiled, youthful, lowans' eyes are considered quite a delicacy in the camp.

At early dawn there was brilliant lightning to the west, and the horizon in that direction became cloudy. Thunder also was heard, but whatever storm there might have been, passed away to the south of us. In the course of a few miles we left the limestone behind, and sandhills again came on. We went over two low ridges, and five or six miles of scrub brought us to the hills we were steering for. Some pine-clad bare rocks induced us to visit them to see if there were rock-holes anywhere. Mr. Tietkens found a native well under one of the rocks, but no water was seen in it, so we went to the higher hills, and in a gully found but a poor supply. There was every appearance of approaching rain, and we got everything under canvas, but in the night of the 9th October a heavy gale of wind sprang up and blew away any rain that might

have fallen. As, however, it was still cloudy, we remained in camp.

From the highest hill here, called Mount Squires, the appearance of the country surrounding was most strange. To the west, and round by north-west to north, was a mass of broken timbered hills with scrubby belts between. The atmosphere was too hazy to allow of distinct vision, but I could distinguish lines of hills, if not ranges, to the westward for a long distance. The view was by no means encouraging, but as hills run on, though entirely different now from those behind us, our only hope is that water may yet be discovered in them. The whole region round about was enveloped in scrubs, and the hills were not much more than visible above them.

The sky had remained cloudy all yesterday, and I hoped, if the wind would only cease, rain would surely fall; so we waited and hoped against hope. We had powerful reverberations of thunder, and forked and vivid lightnings played around, but no rain fell, although the atmosphere was surcharged with electricity and moisture. The wished-for rain departed to some far more favoured places, some happier shores from these remote; and as if to mock our wishes, on the following morning we had nearly three minutes' sprinkling of rain, and then the sky became clear and bright.

By this time we had used up all the water we could find, and had to go somewhere else to get more. A terrible piece of next-to-impassable scrub, four or five miles through, lay right in our path; it also rose and fell into ridges and gullies in it. We

saw one of the Mus conditor, or building rats' nests, which is not the first we have seen by many on this expedition. The scrub being so dense, it was impossible to see more than two or three of the horses at a time, and three different times some of them got away and tried to give us the slip; this caused a great deal of anxiety and trouble, besides loss of time. Shortly after emerging from the scrubs, we struck a small creek with one or two gum-trees on it; a native well was in the bed, and we managed to get water enough for the horses, we having only travelled six miles straight all day. This was a very good, if not actually a pretty, encampment; there was a narrow strip of open ground along the banks, and good vegetation for the horses. We slept upon the sandy bed of the creek to escape the terrible quantities of burrs which grew all over these wilds.

We steered away nearly west for the highest hills we had seen yesterday; there appeared a fall or gap between two; the scrubs were very thick to-day, as was seen by the state of our pack-bags, an infallible test, when we stopped for the night, during the greater part of which we had to repair the bags. We could not find any water, and we seemed to be getting into very desolate places. A densely scrubby and stony gully was before us, which we had to get through or up, and on reaching the top I was disappointed to find that, though there was an open valley below, the hills all round seemed too much disconnected to form any good watering places. Descending, and leaving Gibson and Jimmy with the horses, Mr. Tietkens and I

rode in different directions in search of water. In about two hours we met, in the only likely spot either of us had seen; this was a little watercourse, and following it up to the foot of the hills found a most welcome and unexpectedly large pond for such a place. Above it in the rocks were a line of little basins which contained water, with a rather pronounced odour of stagnation about it; above them again the water was running, but there was a space between upon which no water was seen. We returned for the horses and camped as near as we could find a convenient spot; this, however, was nearly a mile from the water. The valley ran north-east and south-west; it was very narrow, not too open, and there was but poor grass and herbage, the greater portion of the vegetation being spinifex. At eight o'clock at night a thunderstorm came over us from the west, and sprinkled us with a few drops of rain; from west the storm travelled north-west, thence north to east and south, performing a perfect circle around; reaching its original starting point in about an hour, it disappeared, going northerly again. The rest of the night was beautifully calm and clear. Some of our horses required shoeing for the first time since we had left the telegraph line, now over 600 miles behind us. From the top of a hill here the western horizon was bounded by low scrubby ridges, with an odd one standing higher than the rest; to one of these I decided to go next. Some other hills lay a little more to the south, but there was nothing to choose between them; hills also ran along eastward and north-eastwards. At eight o'clock again to-night a thunderstorm came up

from the westward; it sprinkled us with a few drops of rain, and then became dispersed to the south and south-east.

The following day we passed in shoeing horses, mending pack-bags, re-stuffing pack-saddles, and general repairs. While out after the horses Mr. Tietkens found another place with some water, about two miles southerly on the opposite or west side of the valley. Finishing what work we had in hand, we remained here another day. I found that water boiled in this valley at 209°, making the approximate altitude of this country 1534 above sea level. This we always called the Shoeing Camp. We had remained there longer than at any other encampment since we started; we arrived on the 14th and left on the 18th October.

Getting over a low fall in the hills opposite the camp, I turned on my proper course for another hill and travelled fifteen miles; the first three being through very fine country, well grassed, having a good deal of salt bush, being lightly timbered, and free from spinifex. The scrub and triodia very soon made their appearance together, and we were forced to camp in a miserable place, there being neither grass nor water for the unfortunate horses.

The next morning we deviated from our course on seeing a bare-looking rocky hill to the right of our line of march; we reached it in ten miles. Searching about, I found several small holes or cups worn into the solid rock; and as they mostly contained water, the horses were unpacked, while a farther search was made. This hill was always after called the Cups. I rode away to other hills westward, and found a fresh-looking creek, which

emptied into a larger one; but I could find nothing but brine and bitter water. For the first time on this journey I found at this creek great quantities of that lovely flower, the desert pea, Clianthus Damperii. The creek ran south-westward. I searched for hours for water without success, and returned to the party at dusk. Mr. Tietkens had found some more water at another hill; and he and Gibson took some of the horses over to it, leaving Jimmy alone.

Jimmy walked over to one cup we had reserved for our own use, to fill the tin-billy for tea. Walking along with his eyes on the ground, and probably thinking of nothing at all, he reached the cup, and, to his horror and amazement, discovered some thirty or forty aboriginals seated or standing round the spot. As he came close up to, but without seeing them, they all yelled at him in chorus, eliciting from him a yell in return; then, letting fall the tin things he was carrying, he fairly ran back to the camp, when he proceeded to get all the guns and rifles in readiness to shoot the whole lot. But Mr. Tietkens and Gibson returning with the horses, having heard the yells, caused the natives to decamp, and relieved poor Jimmy's mind of its load of care and fear. No doubt these Autocthones were dreadfully annoyed to find their little reservoirs discovered by such water-swallowing wretches as they doubtless thought white men and horses to be; I could only console myself with the reflection, that in such a region as this we must be prepared to lay down our lives at any moment in our attempts to procure water, and we must take it when we find it at any price, as life and water are synonymous

terms. I dare say they know where to get more, but I don't. Some natives were prowling about our encampment all the first half of the night, and my little dog kept up an incessant barking; but the rest was silence.

We used every drop of water from every cup, and moved away for the bitter water I found yesterday. I thought to sweeten it by opening the place with a shovel, and baling a lot of the stagnant water out; but it was irreclaimable, and the horses could not drink it.

Mr. Tietkens returned after dark and reported he had found only one poor place, that might yield sufficient for one drink for all the horses; and we moved down three miles. It was then a mile up in a little gully that ran into our creek. Here we had to dig out a large tank, but the water drained in so slowly that only eight horses could be watered by midday; at about three o'clock eight more were taken, and it was night before they were satisfied; and now the first eight came up again for more, and all the poor wretches were standing in and around the tank in the morning. The next day was spent in doling out a few quarts of water to each horse, while I spent the day in a fruitless search for the fluid which evidently did not exist. Six weeks or two months ago there must have been plenty of water here, but now it was gone; and had I been here at that time, I have no doubt I might have passed across to the Murchison; but now I must retreat to the Shoeing Camp. When I got back at night, I found that not half the horses had received even their miserable allowance of three quarts each, and the horse I had ridden far and fast

all day could get none: this was poor little W. A. of my first expedition. One little wretched cob horse was upon the last verge of existence; he was evidently not well, and had been falling away to a shadow for some time; he was for ever hiding himself in the scrubs, and caused as much trouble to look after him as all the others put together. He was nearly dead; water was of no use to him, and his hide might be useful in repairing some pack-bags, and we might save our stores for a time by eating him; so he was despatched from this scene of woe, but not without woeful cruelty; for Jimmy volunteered to shoot him, and walked down the creek a few yards to where the poor little creature stood. The possibility of any one not putting a bullet into the creature's forehead at once, never occurred to me; but immediately after we heard the shot, Jimmy came sauntering up and said, "Oh! he wants another dose." I jumped up and said, "Oh, you young——" No, I won't say what I told Jimmy. Then Gibson offered to do it, and with a very similar result. With suaviter in modo, sed fortiter in re, I informed him that I did not consider him a sufficiently crack shot to enable him to win a Wimbledon shield; and what the deuce did he—but there, I had to shoot the poor miserable creature, who already had two rifle bullets in his carcass, and I am sure with his last breath he thanked me for that quick relief. There was not sufficient flesh on his bones to cure; but we got a quantity of what there was, and because we fried it we called it steak, and because we called it steak we said we enjoyed it, though it was utterly tasteless. The hide was quite rotten and useless, being as thin and flimsy as

brown paper. It was impossible now to push farther out west, and a retreat to the Shoeing Camp had to be made, though we could not reach it in a day. Thermometer while on this creek 99°, and 100° in shade. This place was always called the Cob.

We had great difficulty in driving the horses past the Cups, as the poor creatures having got water there once, supposed it always existed there. Some of these little indents held only a few pints of water, others a few quarts, and the largest only a few gallons. Early the second day we got back, but we had left so little water behind us, that we found it nearly all gone. Six days having elapsed makes a wonderful difference in water that is already inclined to depart with such evaporation as is always going on in this region. We now went to where Mr. Tietkens had found another place, and he and Gibson took the shovel to open it out, while Jimmy and I unpacked the horses. Here Jimmy Andrews set fire to the spinifex close to all our packs and saddles, and a strong hot wind blowing, soon placed all our belongings in the most terrible jeopardy. The grass was dry and thick, and the fire raged around us in a terrific manner; guns and rifles, riding- and pack-saddles were surrounded by flames in a moment. We ran and halloed and turned back, and frantically threw anything we could catch hold of on to the ground already burnt. Upsetting a couple of packs, we got the bags to dash out the flames, and it was only by the most desperate exertions we saved nearly everything. The instant a thing was lifted, the grass under it seemed to catch fire spontaneously; I was on fire, Jimmy was

on fire, my brains were in a fiery, whirling blaze; and what with the heat, dust, smoke, ashes, and wind, I thought I must be suddenly translated to Pandemonium. Our appearance also was most satanic, for we were both as black as demons.

There was no shade; we hadn't a drop of water; and without speaking a word, off we went up the gully to try and get a drink; there was only just enough thick fluid for us, the horses standing disconsolately round. The day was hot, the thermometer marked 105°. There was not sufficient water here for the horses, and I decided, as we had not actually dug at our old camp, to return there and do so. This we did, and obtained a sufficiency at last. We were enabled to keep the camp here for a few days, while Mr. Tietkens and I tried to find a more northerly route to the west. Leaving Gibson and Jimmy behind, we took three horses and steered away for the north. Our route on this trip led us into the most miserable country, dry ridges and spinifex, sandhills and scrubs, which rolled along in undulations of several miles apart. We could get no water, and camped after a day's journey of forty miles.

Though the day had been very hot, the night became suddenly cool. In the morning of the 28th of October, at five miles we arrived at a scrubby sand ridge, and obtained a most displeasing view of the country further north. The surface seemed more depressed, but entirely filled up with dense scrubs, with another ridge similar to the one we were on bounding the view; we reached it in about eight miles. The view we then got was precisely similar to that behind us, except that

the next undulation that bounded the horizon was fifteen to eighteen miles away. We had now come fifty-one miles from the Shoeing Camp; there was no probability of getting water in such a region. To the west the horizon was bounded by what appeared a perfectly flat and level line running northwards. This flat line to the west seemed not more than twenty-five to thirty miles away; between us and it were a few low stony hills. Not liking the northern, I now decided to push over to the western horizon, which looked so flat. I have said there were some stony hills in that direction; we reached the first in twenty miles. The next was formed of nearly bare rock, where there were some old native gunyahs. Searching about we found another of those extraordinary basins, holes, or cups washed out of the solid rock by ancient ocean's force, ages before an all-seeing Providence placed His dusky children upon this scene, or even before the waters had sufficiently subsided to permit either animal or man to exist here. From this singular cup we obtained a sufficient supply of that fluid so terribly scarce in this region. We had to fill a canvas bucket with a pint pot to water our horses, and we outspanned for the remainder of the day at this exceedingly welcome spot. There were a few hundred acres of excellent grass land, and the horses did remarkably well during the night. The day had been very hot; the thermometer in the shade at this rock stood at 106°.

This proved a most abominable camp; it swarmed with ants, and they kept biting us so continually, that we were in a state of perpetual motion nearly all the time we were there. A few heat-drops of rain

fell. I was not sorry to leave the wretched place, which we left as dry as the surrounding void. We continued our west course over sandhills and through scrub and spinifex. The low ridges of which the western horizon was formed, and which had formerly looked perfectly flat, was reached in five miles; no other view could be got. A mile off was a slightly higher point, to which we went; then the horizon, both north and west of the same nature, ran on as far as could be seen, without any other object upon which to rest the eye. There were a few little gullies about, which we wasted an hour amongst in a fruitless search for water. The Bitter Water Creek now lay south of us; I was not at all satisfied at our retreat from it. I was anxious to find out where it went, for though we had spent several days in its neighbourhood, we had not travelled more than eight or ten miles down it; we might still get a bucket or two of water for our three horses where I had killed the little cob. We therefore turned south in hopes that we might get some satisfaction out of that region at last. We were now, however, thirty-nine or forty miles from the water-place, and two more from the Cob. I was most anxious on account of the water at the Shoeing Camp; it might have become quite exhausted by this time, and where on earth would Gibson and Jimmy go? The thermometer again to-day stood at 106° in the shade.

It was late at night when we reached the Cob tank, and all the water that had accumulated since we left was scarcely a bucketful.

Though the sky was quite overcast, and rain threatened to fall nearly all night, yet none

whatever came. The three horses were huddled up round the perfectly empty tank, having probably stood there all night. I determined to try down the creek. One or two small branches enlarged the channel, and in six or seven miles we saw an old native well, which we scratched out with our hands; but it was perfectly dry. At twelve miles another creek joined from some hills easterly, and immediately below the junction the bed was filled with green rushes. The shovel was at the Shoeing Camp, the bed was too stony to be dug into with our hands. Below this again another and larger creek joined from the east, or rather our creek ran into it. There were some large holes in the new bed, but all were dry. We now followed up this new channel eastwards, as our horses were very bad, and this was in the direction of the home camp. We searched everywhere, up in hills and gullies, and down into the creek again, but all without success, and we had a waterless camp once more. The horses were now terribly bad, they have had only the third of a bucket of water since Wednesday, it being now Friday morning. We had still thirty miles to go to reach the camp, and it was late when the poor unfortunate creatures dragged themselves into it. Fortunately the day had been remarkably cool, almost cold, the thermometer only rose to 80° in the shade. The water had held out well, and it still drained into the tank.

On the following morning, the 1st November, the thermometer actually descended to 32°, though of course there was neither frost nor ice, because there was nothing fluid or moist to freeze. I do

not remember ever feeling such a sensation of intense cold. The day was delightfully cool; I was most anxious to find out if any water could be got at the junction of the two creeks just left. Mr. Tietkens and Gibson took three fresh horses, and the shovel, on Monday, the 3rd of November, and started out there again.

Remaining at the camp was simple agony, the ants were so numerous and annoying; a strong wind was blowing from the eastwards, and the camp was in a continual cloud of sand and dust.

The next day was again windy and dusty, but not quite so hot as yesterday. Jimmy and I and the two dogs were at the camp. He had a habit of biting the dogs' noses, and it was only when they squealed that I saw what he was doing; to-day Cocky was the victim. I said, "What the deuce do you want to be biting the dog's nose for, you might seriously injure his nasal organ?" "Horgin," said Jimmy, "do you call his nose a horgin?" I said, "Yes, any part of the body of man or animal is called an organ." "Well," he said, "I never knew that dogs carried horgins about with them before." I said, "Well, they do, and don't you go biting any of them again." Jimmy of course, my reader can see, was a queer young fellow. On one occasion further back, a good many crows were about, and they became the subject of discussion. I remarked, "I've travelled about in the bush as much as most people, and I never yet saw a little crow that couldn't fly;" then Jimmy said, "Why, when we was at the Birthday, didn't I bring a little crow hin a hague hin?" I said, "What's hin a hague hin?" To which he replied, "I didn't say

"*hin a hague hin*," I says "*Hand her hague hin.*" After this, whenever we went hunting for water, and found it, if there was a sufficient quantity for us we always said, "Oh, there's enough to boil a hague in anyhow." Late in the evening of the next day, Jimmy and I were watching at the tank for pigeons, when the three horses Mr. Tietkens took away came up to drink; this of course informed me they had returned. The horses looked fearfully hollow, and I could see at a glance that they could not possibly have had any water since they left. Mr. Tietkens reported that no water was to be got anywhere, and the country to the west appeared entirely waterless.

I was, however, determined to make one more attempt. Packing two horses with water, I intended to carry it out to the creek, which is forty miles from here. At that point I would water one horse, hang the remainder of the water in a tree, and follow the creek channel to see what became of it. I took Gibson and Jimmy, Mr. Tietkens remaining at the camp. On arriving at the junction of the larger creek, we followed down the channel and in five miles, to my great surprise, though the traveller in these regions should be surprised at nothing, we completely ran the creek out, as it simply ended among triodia, sandhills, and scrubby mulga flats. I was greatly disappointed at this turn of affairs, as I had thought from its size it would at least have led me to some water, and to the discovery of some new geographical features. Except where we struck it, the country had all been burnt, and we had to return to that spot to get grass to camp at. Water existed only in the bags

which we carried with us. I gave the horse I intend riding to-morrow a couple of buckets of water. I suppose he would have drank a dozen—the others got none. The three of us encamped together here.

CHAPTER V.

FROM 9TH NOVEMBER TO 23RD DECEMBER, 1873.

Alone—Native signs—A stinking pit—Ninety miles from water—Elder's Creek—Hughes's Creek—The Colonel's range—Rampart-like range—Hills to the north-east—Jamieson's range—Return to Fort Mueller—Rain—Start for the Shoeing Camp once more—Lightning Rock—Nothing like leather—Pharaoh's inflictions—Photophobists—Hot weather—Fever and philosophy—Tietkens's tank—Gibson taken ill—Mysterious disappearance of water—Earthquake shock—Concussions and falling rocks—The glen—Cut an approach to the water—Another earthquake shock—A bough-house—Gardens—A journey northwards—Pine-clad hills—New line of ranges—Return to depot.

THE following day was Sunday, the 9th of November, but was not a day of rest to any of us. Gibson and Jimmy started back with the pack-horses for the Shoeing Camp, while I intended going westward, westward, and alone! I gave my horse another drink, and fixed a water-bag, containing about eight gallons, in a leather envelope up in a tree; and started away like errant knight on sad adventure bound, though unattended by any esquire or shield-bearer. I rode away west, over open triodia sandhills, with occasional dots of scrub between, for twenty miles. The horizon to the west was bounded by open, undulating rises of no elevation, but whether of sand or stone I could not determine. At this distance from the creek the

sandhills mainly fell off, and the country was composed of ground thickly clothed with spinifex and covered all over with brown gravel. I gave my horse an hour's rest here, with the thermometer at 102° in the shade. There was no grass, and not being possessed of organs that could digest triodia he simply rested. On starting again, the hills I had left now almost entirely disappeared, and looked flattened out to a long low line. I travelled over many miles of burnt, stony, brown, gravelly undulations; at every four or five miles I obtained a view of similar country beyond; at thirty-five miles from the creek the country all round me was exactly alike, but here, on passing a rise that seemed a little more solid than the others, I noticed in a kind of little valley some signs of recent native encampments; and the feathers of birds strewn about—there were hawks', pigeons', and cockatoos' feathers. I rode towards them, and right under my horse's feet I saw a most singular hole in the ground. Dismounting, I found it was another of those extraordinary cups from whence the natives obtain water. This one was entirely filled up with boughs, and I had great difficulty in dragging them out, when I perceived that this orifice was of some depth and contained some water; but on reaching up a drop, with the greatest difficulty, in my hand, I found it was quite putrid; indeed, while taking out the boughs my nasal horgin, as Jimmy would call it, gave me the same information.

I found the hole was choked up with rotten leaves, dead animals, birds, and all imaginable sorts of filth. On poking a stick down into it, seething

bubbles aerated through the putrid mass, and yet the natives had evidently been living upon this fluid for some time; some of the fires in their camp were yet alight. I had very great difficulty in reaching down to bale any of this fluid into my canvas bucket. My horse seemed anxious to drink, but one bucketful was all he could manage. There was not more than five or six buckets of water in this hole; it made me quite sick to get the bucketful for the horse. There were a few hundred acres of silver grass in the little valley near, and as my horse began to feed with an apparent relish, I remained here, though I anticipated at any moment seeing a number of natives make their appearance. I said to myself, "Come one, come all, this rock shall fly from its firm base as soon as I." No enemies came, and I passed the night with my horse feeding quietly close to where I lay. To this I attributed my safety.

Long before sunrise I was away from this dismal place, not giving my horse any more of the disgusting water. In a mile or two I came to the top of one of those undulations which at various distances bound the horizon. They are but swells a little higher than the rest of the country. How far this formation would extend was the question, and what other feature that lay beyond, at which water could be obtained, was a difficult problem to solve. From its appearance I was compelled to suppose that it would remain unaltered for a very considerable distance. From this rise all I could see was another; this I reached in nine miles. Nearly all the country hereabout had been burnt, but not very recently. The ground was still covered with

gravel, with here and there small patches of scrub, the country in general being very good for travelling. I felt sure it would be necessary to travel 150 miles at least before a watered spot could be found. How ardently I wished for a camel; for what is a horse where waters do not exist except at great distances apart? I pushed on to the next rising ground, ten miles, being nearly twenty from where I had camped. The view from here was precisely similar to the former ones. My horse had not travelled well this morning, he seemed to possess but little pluck. Although he was fat yesterday, he is literally poor now. This horse's name was Pratt; he was a poor weak creature, and died subsequently from thirst. I am afraid the putrid water has made him ill, for I have had great difficulty in getting him to go. I turned him out here for an hour at eleven o'clock, when the thermometer indicated 102° in the shade. The horse simply stood in the shade of a small belt of mulga, but he would not try to eat. To the south about a mile there was apparently a more solid rise, and I walked over to it, but there was no cup either to cheer or inebriate. I was now over fifty miles from my water-bag, which was hanging in a tree at the mercy of the winds and waves, not to mention its removal by natives, and if I lost that I should probably lose my life as well. I was now ninety miles from the Shoeing Camp, and unless I was prepared to go on for another hundred miles; ten, fifteen, twenty, or fifty would be of little or no use. It was as much as my horse would do to get back alive. From this point I returned. The animal went so slowly that it was dusk when I got back to the Cup, where I observed, by the

removal of several boughs, that natives had been here in my absence. They had put a lot of boughs back into the hole again. I had no doubt they were close to me now, and felt sure they were watching me and my movements with lynx-like glances from their dark metallic eyes. I looked upon my miserable wretch of a horse as a safeguard from them. He would not eat, but immediately hobbled off to the pit, and I was afraid he

THE STINKING PIT.

would jump in before I could stop him, he was so eager for drink. It was an exceedingly difficult operation to get water out of this abominable hole, as the bucket could not be dipped into it, nor could I reach the frightful fluid at all without hanging my head down, with my legs stretched across the mouth of it, while I baled the fœtid mixture into the

bucket with one of my boots, as I had no other utensil. What with the position I was in and the horrible odour which rose from the seething fluid, I was seized with violent retching. The horse gulped down the first half of the bucket with avidity, but after that he would only sip at it, and I was glad enough to find that the one bucketful I had baled out of the pit was sufficient. I don't think any consideration would have induced me to bale out another.

Having had but little sleep, I rode away at three o'clock next morning. The horse looked wretched and went worse. It was past midday when I had gone twenty miles, when, entering sandhill country, I was afraid he would knock up altogether. After an hour and a half's rest he seemed better; he walked away almost briskly, and we reached the water-bag much earlier than I expected. Here we both had a good drink, although he would have emptied the bag three times over if he could have got it. The day had been hot.

When I left this singular watercourse, where plenty of water existed in its upper portions, but was either too bitter or too salt for use, I named it Elder's Creek. The other that joins it I called Hughes's Creek, and the range in which they exist the Colonel's Range.

There was not much water left for the horse. He was standing close to the bag for some hours before daylight. He drank it up and away we went, having forty miles to go. I arrived very late. Everything was well except the water supply, and that was gradually ceasing. In a week there will be none. The day had been pleasant and cool.

Several more days were spent here, re-digging and enlarging the old tank and trying to find a new. Gibson and I went to some hills to the south, with a rampart-like face. The place swarmed with pigeons, but we could find no water. We could hear the birds crooning and cooing in all directions as we rode, "like the moan of doves in immemorial elms, and the murmurings of innumerable bees." This rampart-like ridge was festooned with cypress pines, and had there been water there, I should have thought it a very pretty place. Every day was telling upon the water at the camp. We had to return unsuccessful, having found none. The horses were loose, and rambled about in several mobs and all directions, and at night we could not get them all together. The water was now so low that, growl as we may, go we must. It was five P.M. on the 17th of November when we left. The nearest water now to us that I knew of was at Fort Mueller, but I decided to return to it by a different route from that we had arrived on, and as some hills lay north-easterly, and some were pretty high, we went away in that direction.

We travelled through the usual poor country, and crossed several dry water-channels. In one I thought to get a drink for the horses. The party having gone on, I overtook them and sent Gibson back with the shovel. We brought the horses back to the place, but he gave a very gloomy opinion of it. The supply was so poor that, after working and watching the horses all night, they could only get a bucketful each by morning, and I was much vexed at having wasted time and energy in such a wretched spot, which we left in huge

disgust, and continued on our course. Very poor regions were traversed, every likely-looking spot was searched for water. I had been steering for a big hill from the Shoeing Camp; a dry creek issued from its slopes. Here the hills ceased in this northerly direction, only to the east and south-east could ranges be seen, and it is only in them that water can be expected in this region. Fort Mueller was nearly fifty miles away, on a bearing of 30° south of east. We now turned towards it. A detached, jagged, and inviting-looking range lay a little to the east of north-east; it appeared similar to the Fort Mueller hills. I called it Jamieson's* Range, but did not visit it. Half the day was lost in useless searching for water, and we encamped without any; thermometer 104° at ten A.M. At night we camped on an open piece of spinifex country. We had thunder and lightning, and about six heat-drops of rain fell.

The next day we proceeded on our course for Fort Mueller; at twelve miles we had a shower of rain, with thunder and lightning, that lasted a few seconds only. We were at a bare rock, and had the rain lasted with the same force for only a minute, we could have given our horses a drink upon the spot, but as it was we got none. The horses ran all about licking the rock with their parched tongues.

Late at night we reached our old encampment, where we had got water in the sandy bed of the creek. It was now no longer here, and we had to go further up. I went on ahead to look for a spot, and returning, met the horses in hobbles going up the creek, some right in the bed. I intended to

have dug a tank for them, but the others let them go too soon. I consoled myself by thinking that they had only to go far enough, and they would get water on the surface. With the exception of the one bucket each, this was their fourth night without water. The sky was now as black as pitch; it thundered and lightened, and there was every appearance of a fall of rain, but only a light mist or heavy dew fell for an hour or two; it was so light and the temperature so hot that we all lay without a rag on till morning.

At earliest dawn Mr. Tietkens and I took the shovel and walked to where we heard the horse-bells. Twelve of the poor animals were lying in the bed of the creek, with limbs stretched out as if dead, but we were truly glad to find they were still alive, though some of them could not get up. Some that were standing up were working away with their hobbled feet the best way they could, stamping out the sand trying to dig out little tanks, and one old stager had actually reached the water in his tank, so we drove him away and dug out a proper place. We got all the horses watered by nine o'clock. It was four A.M. when we began to dig, and our exercise gave us an excellent appetite for our breakfast. Gibson built a small bough gunyah, under which we sat, with the thermometer at 102°.

In the afternoon the sky became overcast, and at six P.M. rain actually began to fall heavily, but only for a quarter of an hour, though it continued to drip for two or three hours. During and after that we had heavy thunder and most vivid lightnings. The thermometer at nine fell to 48°; in the sun to-day it had been 176°, the difference being 128° in a few

hours, and we thought we should be frozen stiff where we stood. A slight trickle of surface water came down the creek channel. The rain seemed to have come from the west, and I resolved to push out there again and see. This was Friday; a day's rest was actually required by the horses, and the following day being Sunday, we yet remained.

Monday, 24th November.—We had thunder, lightnings, and sprinklings of rain again during last night. We made another departure for the Shoeing Camp and Elder's Creek. At the bare rock previously mentioned, which was sixteen miles en route 30° north of west, we found the rain had left sufficient water for us, and we camped. The native well was full, and water also lay upon the rock. The place now seemed exceedingly pretty, totally different from its original appearance, when we could get no water at it. How wonderful is the difference the all-important element creates! While we were here another thunderstorm came up from the west and refilled all the basins, which the horses had considerably reduced. I called this the Lightning Rock, as on both our visits the lightning played so vividly around us. Just as we were starting, more thunder and lightnings and five minutes' rain came.

From here I steered to the one-bucket tank, and at one place actually saw water lying upon the ground, which was a most extraordinary circumstance. I was in great hopes the country to the west had been well visited by the rains. The country to-day was all dense scrubs, in which we saw a Mus conditor's nest. When in these scrubs I always ride in advance with a horse's bell fixed on my stirrup, so that those behind, although they cannot

see, may yet hear which way to come. Continually working this bell has almost deprived me of the faculty of hearing; the constant passage of the horses through these direful scrubs has worn out more canvas bags than ever entered into my calculations. Every night after travelling, some, if not all the bags, are sure to be ripped, causing the frequent loss of flour and various small articles that get jerked out. This has gone on to such an extent that every ounce of twine has been used up; the only supply we can now get is by unravelling some canvas. Ourselves and our clothes, as well as our pack-bags, get continually torn also. Any one in future traversing these regions must be equipped entirely in leather; there must be leather shirts and leather trousers, leather hats, leather heads, and leather hearts, for nothing else can stand in a region such as this.

We continued on our course for the one-bucket place; but searching some others of better appearance, I was surprised to find that not a drop of rain had fallen, and I began to feel alarmed that the Shoeing Camp should also have been unvisited. One of the horses was unwell, and concealed himself in the scrubs; some time was lost in recovering him. As it was dark and too late to go on farther, we had to encamp without water, nor was there any grass.

The following day we arrived at the old camp, at which there had been some little rain. The horses were choking, and rushed up the gully like mad; we had to drive them into a little yard we had made when here previously, as a whole lot of them treading into the tank at once might ruin it for

ever. The horse that hid himself yesterday knocked up to-day, and Gibson remained to bring him on; he came four hours after us, though we only left him three miles away. There was not sufficient water in the tank for all the horses; I was greatly grieved to find that so little could be got.

The camp ground had now become simply a moving mass of ants; they were bad enough when we left, but now they were frightful; they swarmed over everything, and bit us to the verge of madness. It is eleven days since we left this place, and now having returned, it seems highly probable that I shall soon be compelled to retreat again. Last night the ants were unbearable to Mr. Tietkens and myself, but Gibson and Jimmy do not appear to lose any sleep on their account. With the aid of a quart pot and a tin dish I managed to get some sort of a bath; but this is a luxury the traveller in these regions must in a great measure learn to do without. My garments and person were so perfumed with smashed ants, that I could almost believe I had been bathing in a vinegar cask. It was useless to start away from here with all the horses, without knowing how, or if any, rains had fallen out west. I therefore despatched Mr. Tietkens and Jimmy to take a tour round to all our former places. At twenty-five miles was the almost bare rocky hill which I called par excellence the Cups, from the number of those little stone indentures upon its surface, which I first saw on the 19th of October, this being the 29th of November. If no water was there, I directed Mr. Tietkens then only to visit Elder's Creek and return; for if there was none at the

Cups, there would be but little likelihood of any in other places.

Gibson and I had a most miserable day at the camp. The ants were dreadful; the hot winds blew clouds of sandy dust all through and over the place; the thermometer was at 102°. We repaired several pack-bags. A few mosquitoes for variety paid us persistent attentions during the early part of the night; but their stings and bites were delightful pleasures compared to the agonies inflicted on us by the myriads of small black ants. Another hot wind and sand-dust day; still sewing and repairing pack-bags to get them into something like order and usefulness.

At one P.M. Mr. Tietkens returned from the west, and reported that the whole country in that direction had been entirely unvisited by rains, with the exception of the Cups, and there, out of several dozen rocky indents, barely sufficient water for their three horses could be got. Elder's Creek, the Cob tank, the Colonel's Range, Hughes's Creek, and all the ranges lying between here and there, the way they returned, were perfectly dry, not a drop of moisture having fallen in all that region. Will it evermore be thus? Jupiter impluvius? Thermometer to-day 106° in shade. The water supply is so rapidly decreasing that in two days it will be gone. This is certainly not a delightful position to hold, indeed it is one of the most horrible of imaginable encampments. The small water supply is distant about a mile from the camp, and we have to carry it down in kegs on a horse, and often when we go for it, we find the horses have just emptied and dirtied the tank. We are eaten alive by flies,

ants, and mosquitoes, and our existence here cannot be deemed a happy one. Whatever could have obfuscated the brains of Moses, when he omitted to inflict Pharaoh with such exquiste torturers as ants, I cannot imagine. In a fiery region like to this I am photophobist enough to think I could wallow at ease, in blissful repose, in darkness, amongst cool and watery frogs; but ants, oh ants, are frightful! Like Othello, I am perplexed in the extreme—rain threatens every day, I don't like to go and I can't stay. Over some hills Mr. Tietkens and I found an old rocky native well, and worked for hours with shovel and levers, to shift great boulders of rock, and on the 4th of December we finally left the deceitful Shoeing Camp—never, I hope, to return. The new place was no better; it was two and a half miles away, in a wretched, scrubby, rocky, dry hole, and by moving some monstrous rocks, which left holes where they formerly rested, some water drained in, so that by night the horses were all satisfied. There was a hot, tropical, sultry feeling in the atmosphere all day, though it was not actually so hot as most days lately; some terrific lightnings occurred here on the night of the 5th of December, but we heard no thunder. On the 6th and 7th Mr. Tietkens and I tried several places to the eastwards for water, but without success. At three P.M. of the 7th, we had thunder and lightning, but no rain; thermometer 106°. On returning to camp, we were told that the water was rapidly failing, it becoming fine by degrees and beautifully less. At night the heavens were illuminated for hours by the most wonderful lightnings; it was, I suppose, too distant to permit the sound of thunder to be heard. On

the 8th we made sure that rain would fall, the night and morning were very hot. We had clouds, thunder, lightning, thermometer 112°, and every mortal disagreeable thing we wanted; so how could we expect rain? but here, thanks to Moses, or Pharaoh, or Providence, or the rocks, we were not troubled with ants. The next day we cleared out; the water was gone, so we went also. The thermometer was 110° in the shade when we finally left these miserable hills. We steered away again for Fort Mueller, viâ the Lightning Rock, which was forty-five miles away. We traversed a country nearly all scrub, passing some hills and searching channels and gullies as we went. We only got over twenty-one miles by night; I had been very unwell for the last three or four days, and to-day I was almost too ill to sit on my horse; I had fever, pains all over, and a splitting headache. The country being all scrub, I was compelled as usual to ride with a bell on my stirrup. Jingle jangle all day long; what with heat, fever, and the pain I was in, and the din of that infernal bell, I really thought it no sin to wish myself out of this world, and into a better, cooler, and less noisy one, where not even—

> "To heavenly harps the angelic choir,
> Circling the throne of the eternal King;"

should—

> "With hallowed lips and holy fire,
> Rejoice their hymns of praise to sing;"

which revived in my mind vague opinions with regard to our notions of heaven. If only to sit for ever singing hymns before Jehovah's throne is to be the future occupation of our souls, it is doubtful if

the thought should be so pleasing, as the opinions of Plato and other philosophers, and which Addison has rendered to us thus—

> "Eternity, thou pleasing, dreadful thought,
> Through what variety of untried being,
> Through what new scenes and changes must we pass
> The wide, the unbounded prospect lies before me," &c.

But I am trenching upon debatable ground, and have no desire to enter an argument upon the subject. It is doubtless better to believe the tenets taught us in our childhood, than to seek at mature age to unravel a mystery which it is self-evident the Great Creator never intended that man in this state of existence should become acquainted with. However, I'll say no more on such a subject, it is quite foreign to the matter of my travels, and does not ease my fever in any way—in fact it rather augments it.

The next morning, the 10th, I was worse, and it was agony to have to rise, let alone to ride. We reached the Lightning Rock at three P.M., when the thermometer indicated 110°. The water was all but gone from the native well, but a small quantity was obtained by digging. I was too ill to do anything. A number of native fig-trees were growing on this rock, and while Gibson was using the shovel, Mr. Tietkens went to get some for me, as he thought they might do me good. It was most fortunate that he went, for though he did not get any figs, he found a fine rock water-hole which we had not seen before, and where all the horses could drink their fill. I was never more delighted in my life. The thought of moving again to-morrow was

killing—indeed I had intended to remain, but this enabled us all to do so. It was as much as I could do to move even the mile, to where we shifted our camp; thermometer 108°. By the next day, 12th, the horses had considerably reduced the water, and by to-morrow it will be gone. This basin would be of some size were it cleaned out; we could not tell what depth it was, as it is now almost entirely filled with the débris of ages. Its shape is elliptical, and is thirty feet long by fifteen broad, its sides being even more abrupt than perpendicular—that is to say, shelving inwards—and the horses could only water by jumping down at one place. There was about three feet of water, the rest being all soil. To-day was much cooler. I called this Tietkens's Tank. On the 14th, the water was gone, the tank dry, and all the horses away to the east, and it was past three when they were brought back. Unfortunately, Gibson's little dog Toby followed him out to-day and never returned. After we started I sent Gibson back to await the poor pup's return, but at night Gibson came without Toby; I told him he could have any horses he liked to go back for him to-morrow, and I would have gone myself only I was still too ill. During the night Gibson was taken ill just as I had been; therefore poor Toby was never recovered. We have still one little dog of mine which I bought in Adelaide, of the same kind as Toby, that is to say, the small black-and-tan English terrier, though I regret to say he is decidedly not, of the breed of that Billy indeed, who used to kill rats for a bet; I forget how many one morning he ate, but you'll find it in sporting books yet. It was very late when we

reached our old bough gunyah camp; there was no water. I intended going up farther, but, being behind, Mr. Tietkens and Jimmy had began to unload, and some of the horses were hobbled out when I arrived; Gibson was still behind. For the second time I have been compelled to retreat to this range; shall I ever get away from it? When we left the rock, the thermometer indicated 110° in the shade.

Next morning I was a little better, but Gibson was very ill—indeed I thought he was going to die, and would he had died quietly there. Mr. Tietkens and I walked up the creek to look for the horses. We found and took about half of them to the surface water up in the narrow glen. When we arrived, there was plenty of water running merrily along the creek channel, and there were several nice ponds full, but when we brought the second lot to the place an hour and a half afterwards, the stream had ceased to flow, and the nice ponds just mentioned were all but empty and dry. This completely staggered me to find the drainage cease so suddenly. The day was very hot, 110°, when we returned to camp.

I was in a state of bewilderment at the thought of the water having so quickly disappeared, and I was wondering where I should have to retreat to next, as it appeared that in a day or two there would literally be no water at all. I felt ill again from my morning's walk, and lay down in the 110° of shade, afforded by the bough gunyah which Gibson had formerly made.

I had scarcely settled myself on my rug when a most pronounced shock of earthquake occurred,

the volcanic wave, which caused a sound like thunder, passing along from west to east right under us, shook the ground and the gunyah so violently as to make me jump up as though nothing was the matter with me. As the wave passed on, we heard up in the glen to the east of us great concussions, and the sounds of smashing and falling rocks hurled from their native eminences rumbling and crashing into the glen below. The atmosphere was very still to-day, and the sky clear except to the deceitful west.

Gibson is still so ill that we did not move the camp. I was in a great state of anxiety about the water supply, and Tietkens and I walked first after the horses, and then took them up to the glen, where I was enchanted to behold the stream again in full flow, and the sheets of surface water as large, and as fine as when we first saw them yesterday. I was puzzled at this singular circumstance, and concluded that the earthquake had shaken the foundations of the hills, and thus forced the water up; but from whatsoever cause it proceeded, I was exceedingly glad to see it. To-day was much cooler than yesterday. At three P.M., the same time of day, we had another shock of earthquake similar to that of yesterday, only that the volcanic wave passed along a little northerly of the camp, and the sounds of breaking and falling rocks came from over the hills to the north-east of us.

Gibson was better on the 17th, and we moved the camp up into the glen where the surface water existed. We pitched our encampment upon a small piece of rising ground, where there was a fine little pool of water in the creek bed, partly formed

of rocks, over which the purling streamlet fell, forming a most agreeable little basin for a bath.

The day was comparatively cool, 100°. The glen here is almost entirely choked up with tea-trees, and we had to cut great quantities of wood away so as to approach the water easily. The tea-tree is the only timber here for firewood; many trees are of some size, being seven or eight inches through, but mostly very crooked and gnarled. The green wood appears to burn almost as well as the dead, and forms good ash for baking dampers. Again to-day we had our usual shock of earthquake and at the usual time. Next day at three P.M., earthquake, quivering hills, broken and toppling rocks, with scared and agitated rock wallabies. This seemed a very ticklish, if not extremely dangerous place for a depot. Rocks overhung and frowned down upon us in every direction; a very few of these let loose by an earthquake would soon put a period to any further explorations on our part. We passed a great portion of to-day (18th) in erecting a fine large bough-house; they are so much cooler than tents. We also cleared several patches of rich brown soil, and made little Gardens (de Plantes), putting in all sorts of garden and other seeds. I have now discovered that towards afternoon, when the heat is greatest the flow of water ceases in the creek daily; but at night, during the morning hours and up to about midday, the little stream flows murmuring on over the stones and through the sand as merrily as one can wish. Fort Mueller cannot be said to be a pretty spot, for it is so confined by the frowning, battlemented, fortress-like walls of black and broken hills, that there is scarcely room to turn

in it, and attacks
eaded here.
have had to clear
stones and huge bu
there. The slopes
d with this dreadfu
three or four miles
y country which, as
s this range. The he
the horses got so fresh
ed to catch any. I still
at Elder's Creek, a hur
ly to enable me to push
tens every day the sky
nber to fall, especially tow
Tietkens and I prepared rid
orrow, the 20th, to inspect
e got out in that direction
d near a hill I named
a small creek, but no w
ared to have been totally u
e carried some water in a k
horses got none. The cou
was mostly red sandhills,
hat account free from spini
t north, 40° east. We next
looking, bluff-ending hill,
Before arriving at it we
of pine-clad hills for wat
ing the hill in twenty-two m
es, we ascended the hill; fro
glasses, that to the north a

and westerly a number of ranges lay at a very considerable distance. The nearest, which lay north, was evidently sixty or seventy miles off. These ranges appeared to be of some length, but were not sufficiently raised above the ocean of scrubs, which occupied the intervening spaces, and rose into high and higher undulations, to allow me to form an opinion with regard to their altitude. Those east of north appeared higher and farther away, and were bolder and more pointed in outline. None of them were seen with the naked eye at first, but when once seen with the field-glasses, the mind's eye would always represent them to us, floating and faintly waving apparently skywards in their vague and distant mirage. This discovery instantly created a burning desire in both of us to be off and reach them; but there were one or two preliminary determinations to be considered before starting. We are now nearly fifty miles from Fort Mueller, and the horses have been all one day, all one night, and half to-day without water. There might certainly be water at the new ranges, but then again there might not, and although they were at least sixty miles off, our horses might easily reach them. If, however, no water were found, they and perhaps we could never return. My reader must not confound a hundred miles' walk in this region with the same distance in any other. The greatest walker that ever stepped would find more than his match here. In the first place the feet sink in the loose and sandy soil, in the second it is densely covered with the hideous porcupine; to avoid the constant prickings from this the walker is compelled to raise his feet to an unnatural height; and another hideous

.tion, which I call sa
although it does no
s. Again, the groun
he soles off one's boo
ıething like 180° in
thirst at every mo
h to make any one
ıimself into such a
:h a case is by far t
lour wasted upon bu
: love's labour lost.
ıse about in all dire
.n masses of hills,
g them for a new
ldled our horses, a
s to say easterly;
place that could
·om the sky. Th
looking hill, and
tops; but after
and the horses d
, again without w
the night the th
s so cold that I h
his day was us
searchings with
-two miles, th
n for the third
ever, nearing
xteen miles, e
ıgh we were
ı, and change

CHAPTER VI.

FROM 23RD DECEMBER, 1873 TO 16TH JANUARY, 1874.

Primitive laundry—Natives troublesome in our absence—The ives—Gibson's estimate of a straight heel—Christmas day, 1873—Attacked by natives—A wild caroo—Wild grapes from a sandal-wood tree—More earthquakes—The moon on the waters—Another journey northwards—Retreat to the depot—More rain at the depot—Jimmy's escape—A "canis familiaris"—An innocent lamb—Sage-bush scrubs—Groves of oak-trees—Beautiful green flat—Crab-hole water—Bold and abrupt range—A glittering cascade—Invisibly bright water—The murmur in the shell—A shower bath—The Alice Falls—Ascend to the summit—A strange view—Gratified at our discoveries—Return to Fort Mueller—Digging with a tomahawk—Storing water—Wallaby for supper—Another attack—Gibson's gardens—Opossums destructive—Birds—Thoughts—Physical peculiarities of the region—Haunted—Depart.

THE way we wash our clothes is primitive—it can only be done at a depot. When we have sufficient water, we simply put them into it, and leave them until we want to change again, and then do the same with those we take off; sometimes they sweeten for several days, oftener much less. It is an inexpensive method, which, however, I suppose I must not claim as an invention. On the 23rd, when we arrived, Gibson informed us that the natives had been exceedingly troublesome, and had thrown several spears and stones down from the

above, so that h
d themselves with
great protection to
hese wretches had
their feeding groun
for three days, and
all the time we wer
ur afternoon earthqu
t twi
had occurred
hostility of the native
senses than one, as
ing out my desire to
es north. Christmas h
d by Gibson, who said h
hristmas pudding, and
he table. We therefore
ample justice to Gibson'
shot several rock-wallabie
y are capital eating, especi
have a great resemblance
ibson and Jimmy did n
my always had some tale
ear whenever I returned
was a very young
uld never wash clean
de some remark himself; an
t think what you and Tiet
ays washing yourselves for
r health and cleanliness, to
l he, "if I was to bathe lik
e me the *ives*." I often show
nend their boots. One day,
our bough-house, we were e
pson used to tread so uneven

he heels were turned nearly upwards, and he walked more on the uppers than on the soles, therefore his required all the more repairing. Picking up one of my boots that I had just mended, Gibson looked very hard at it, and at last said, "How do you manage to wear your boots so straight?" "Oh," I said, "perhaps my legs are straight." He rejoined, "Well, ain't mine straight too?" I said, "I don't know; I don't see them often enough to tell," alluding to his not bathing. "Well," he said at last, with a deep sigh, "By G—"—gum, I suppose he meant—"I'd give a pound to be able to wear my boots as straight as you. No, I'm damned if I wouldn't give five-and-twenty bob!" We laughed. We had some rolls of smoked beef, which caused the ants to come about the camp, and we had to erect a little table with legs in the water, to lay these on. One roll had a slightly musty smell, and Gibson said to me, "This roll's rotten; shall I chuck it away?" "Chuck it away," I said; "why, man, you must be cranky to talk such rubbish as throwing away food in such a region as this!" "Why," said he, "nobody won't eat it." "No," said I, "*but* somebody will eat it; I for one, and enjoy it too." Whereupon he looked up at me, and said, "Oh, are you one of them as likes yer meat 'igh?" I was annoyed at his stupendous stupidity, and said, "One of them! Who are you talking about? Who are *they* I'd like to know? When we boil this meat, if we put a piece of charcoal in the pot, it will come out as sweet as a nut." He merely replied, with a dubious expression of face, "Oh!" but he ate his share of it as readily as

anybody else. The next d
Mr. Tietkens and Gibson
had lately brought back,
they brought home late, an
natives showed that they
away for several miles, an
near a small creek, along
range, where there was w
away some ducks visited th
was too thick to allow us
The day was cool, although
sion in the atmosphere, an
by one's feelings what m
thermometer, as I have o
days with the thermomete
it ranged up to 108° or
excessively relaxing, for
a little after three o'cloc
appears to remain until
It is more than probabl
been hunted by the native
water, will not come back
to water any more; so I
at the camp, to fetch the
morning.

And now comes Thur
Christmas Day, 1873. Al
Years following years, steal
at last they steal us from
Horace says is, Eheu f
postume, postume:—Years
to me, lost to me.

While Jimmy Andrews wa
upon the horse that was tied

startled out of our propriety by the howls and yells of a pack of fiends in human form and aboriginal appearance, who had clambered up the rocks just above our camp. I could only see some ten or a dozen in the front, but scores more were dodging in and out among the rocks. The more prominent throng were led by an ancient individual, who, having fitted a spear, was just in the act of throwing it down amongst us, when Gibson seized a rifle, and presented him with a conical Christmas box, which smote the rocks with such force, and in such near proximity to his hinder parts, that in a great measure it checked his fiery ardour, and induced most of his more timorous following to climb with most perturbed activity over the rocks. The ancient more slowly followed, and then from behind the fastness of his rocky shield, he spoke spears and boomerangs to us, though he used none. He, however, poured out the vials of his wrath upon us, as he probably thought to some purpose. I was not linguist enough to be able to translate all he said; but I am sure my free interpretation of the gist of his remarks is correct, for he undoubtedly stigmatised us as a vile and useless set of lazy, crawling, white-faced wretches, who came sitting on hideous brutes of hippogryphs, being too lazy to walk like black men, and took upon ourselves the right to occupy any country or waters we might chance to find; that we killed and ate any wallabies and other game we happened to see, thereby depriving him and his friends of their natural, lawful food, and that our conduct had so incensed himself and his noble friends, who were now in the shelter of the rocks near him, that he begged us to take warning

that it was the unanimous determination of himself and his noble friends to destroy such vermin as he considered us, and our horses to be, and drive us from the face of the earth.

It appeared to me, however, that his harangue required punctuation, so I showed him the rifle again, whereupon he incontinently indulged in a full stop. The natives then retired from those rocks, and commenced their attack by throwing spears through the tea-tree from the opposite side of the creek. Here we had the back of our gunyah for a shield, and could poke the muzzles of our guns and rifles through the interstices of the boughs. We were compelled to discharge our pieces at them to ensure our peace and safety.

Our last discharge drove away the enemy, and soon after, Jimmy came with all the horses. Gibson shot a wallaby, and we had fried chops for our Christmas dinner. We drew from the medical department a bottle of rum to celebrate Christmas and victory. We had an excellent dinner (for explorers), although we had eaten our Christmas pudding two days before. We perhaps had no occasion to envy any one their Christmas dinner, although perhaps we did. Thermometer 106° in the shade. On this occasion Mr. Tietkens, who was almost a professional, sang us some songs in a fine, deep, clear voice, and Gibson sang two or three love songs, not altogether badly; then it was Jimmy's turn. He said he didn't know no love songs, but he would give us Tommy or Paddy Brennan. This gentleman appears to have started in business as a highwayman in the romantic mountains of Limerick. One verse that Jimmy

gave, and which pleased us most, because we couldn't quite understand it, was :—

> "It was in sweet Limerick (er) citty
> That he left his mother dear;
> And in the Limerick (er) mountains,
> He commenced his wild caroo-oo."

Upon our inquiring what a caroo was, Jimmy said he didn't know. No doubt it was something very desperate, and we considered we were perhaps upon a bit of a wild caroo ourselves.

The flies had now become a most terrible plague, especially to the horses, but most of all to the unfortunate that happens to be tied up. One horse, when he found he could not break away, threw himself down so often and so violently, and hurt himself so much, that I was compelled to let him go, unless I had allowed him to kill himself, which he would certainly have done.

A small grape-like fruit on a light green bush of the sandal-wood kind, having one soft stone, was got here. This fruit is black when ripe, and very good eating raw. We tried them cooked with sugar as jam, and though the others liked them very much, I could not touch them. The afternoons were most oppressive, and we had our usual earthquakes; one on the 28th causing a more than usual falling of rocks and smashing of tea-trees.

For a few days I was taking a rest. I was grieved to find that the water gradually ceased running earlier than formerly—that is to say, between eleven and twelve—the usual time had been between two and three P.M.; but by the morning every little basin was refilled. The phases of the moon have evidently something to do with the water

supply. As the moon waxes, the power of the current wanes, and vice versâ. On the 1st January, 1874, the moon was approaching its full, a quarter's change of the moon being the only time rain is likely to fall in this country; rain is threatening now every day. After a hot and sultry night, on the 2nd, at about two o'clock, a fine thunder-shower from the east came over the range, and though it did not last very long, it quite replenished the water supply in the creek, and set it running again after it had left off work for the day. This shower has quite reanimated my hopes, and Mr. Tietkens and I at once got three horses, and started off to reach the distant range, hoping now to find some water which would enable us to reach it. For ten miles from the camp the shower had extended; but beyond that distance no signs of it were visible anywhere. On the 4th we found a clay-pan, having a clay-hole at one end with some mud in it, and which the natives had but just left, but no water; then another, where, as thunderstorms were flying about in all directions, we dug out a clay tank. While at work our clothes were damped with a sprinkling, but not enough rain fell to leave any on the ground. It seemed evident I must pack out water from Fort Mueller, if ever I reached the new feature, as Nature evidently did not intend to assist, though it seemed monstrous to have to do so, while the sky was so densely overcast and black, and threatening thunderstorms coming up from all directions, and carrying away, right over our heads, thousands of cubic acres of water which must fall somewhere. I determined to wait a few days and see the upshot of all these threatenings. To the east it was undoubtedly raining, though to the west

the sky was beautifully clear. We returned to the native clay-pan, hoping rain might have fallen, but it was drier than when we left it. The next morning the clear sky showed that all the rains had departed. We deepened the native clay-hole, and then left for the depot, and found some water in a little hole about ten miles from it. We rested the horses while we dug a tank, and drained all the water into it; not having a pickaxe, we could not get down deep enough.

From here I intended to pack some water out north. While we were digging, another thunderstorm came up, sprinkling us with a few drops to show its contempt; it then split in halves, going respectively north and south, apparently each dropping rain on the country they passed over.

On reaching the camp, we were told that two nice showers had fallen, the stream now showing no signs of languishing all the day long. With his usual intelligence, Jimmy Andrews had pulled a double-barelled gun out from under a heap of pack-bags and other things by the barrel; of course, the hammer got caught and snapped down on the cartridge, firing the contents, but most fortunately missing his body by half an inch. Had it been otherwise, we should have found him buried, and Gibson a lunatic and alone. No natives had appeared while we were away; as I remembered what the old gentleman told me about keeping away, so I hoped he would do the same, on account of my parting remarks to him, which it seems he must have understood.

In the middle of the night my little dog Cocky rushed furiously out of the tent, and began to bark

at, and chase some animal round the camp; he eventually drove it right into the tent. In the obscured moonlight I supposed it was a native dog, but it was white, and looked exactly like a large fat lamb. It was, at all events, an innocent lamb to come near us, for as it sauntered away, I sent a revolver bullet after it, and it departed at much greater speed, squealing and howling until out of earshot.

On the 7th Mr. Tietkens and I again departed for the north. That night we got wet through; there was plenty of water, but none that would remain. Being sure that the native clay-hole would now be full, we passed it on our left, and at our outmost tank at nineteen miles were delighted to find that both it and the clay-pan near it were full. We called this the Emu Tank. We now went to the bare red hill with pines, previously mentioned, and found a trickling flow of water in a small gully. I hope it will trickle till I return. We are now fifty miles from Fort Mueller, and the distant ranges seemed even farther away than that.

Moving north, we went over a mass of open-rolling sandhills with triodia, and that other abominable plant I call the sage-bush. In appearance it is something like low tea-tree, but it differs entirely from that family, inasmuch as it utterly abhors water. Although it is not spiny like the triodia, it is almost as annoying, both to horse and man, as it grows too high for either to step over without stretching, and it is too strong to be easily moved aside; hence, horse-tracks in this region go zigzag.

At thirty-five miles the open sandhills ceased, and scrubs came on. It was a cool and cloudy day.

We passed through a few groves of the pretty desert oak-trees, which I have not seen for some time; a few native poplars and currajongs were also seen to-day. The horses wandered a long way back in the night.

After travelling fifteen miles, we were now rapidly approaching the range, and we debouched upon a eucalyptus flat, which was covered with a beautiful carpet of verdure, and not having met with gum-trees for some time, those we saw here, looked exceedingly fine, and the bark dazzling white. Here we found a clay crab-hole. These holes are so-called in parts of Australia, usually near the coasts, where freshwater crabs and crayfish bury themselves in the bottoms of places where rain water often lodges; the holes these creatures make are tubes of two, three, or four feet deep, whose sides and bottom are cemented, and which hold water like a glass bottle; in these tubes they remain till rain again lodges above, when for a time they are released. The crab-hole we found contained a little water, which our horses drank with great avidity. The range was now only six or seven miles off, and it stood up bold and abrupt, having steep and deep gorges here and there, in its southern front. It was timberless and whitish-looking, and I had no doubt of finding water at it. I was extremely annoyed to discover that my field-glasses, an excellent pair, had been ripped off my saddle in the scrubs, and I should now be disappointed in obtaining any distant view from the summit.

"They were lost to the view like the sweet morning's dew;
They had been, and were not, was all that I knew."

From the crab-hole, in seven miles we reached a gorge in the mountain side, travelling through scrub, over quartz, pebbly hills, and occasional gum flats, all trending west, probably forming a creek in that direction.

In the gorge facing us we could discover a glittering little thread of water pouring down in a cascade from the top of the mountain into the gorge below, and upon reaching it we found, to our great delight, that we were upon the stony bank of a beautiful and pellucid little stream, whose almost invisibly bright water was so clear that not till our horses splashed it up with their feet could we quite realise this treasure trove. It was but a poor place for the horses to graze, on account of the glen being so stony and confined, but there was no occasion for them to ramble far to get plenty of grass, or a shady place either. We had some dinner and a most agreeable rest,—

> "'Neath the gum-trees' shade reclining,
> Where the dark green foliage twining,
> Screened us from the fervid shining
> Of the noontide sun."

This spot was distant about ninety miles from Fort Mueller, in a straight line. The day was cool and breezy. After our dinner we walked up to the foot of the cascade, along the margin of the transparent stream, which meandered amongst great boulders of rock; at the foot we found the rocks rose almost perpendicularly from a charming little basin, into which the stream from above and the spray from below mingled with a most melodious sound, so pleasant to the ear at any time, but how much more

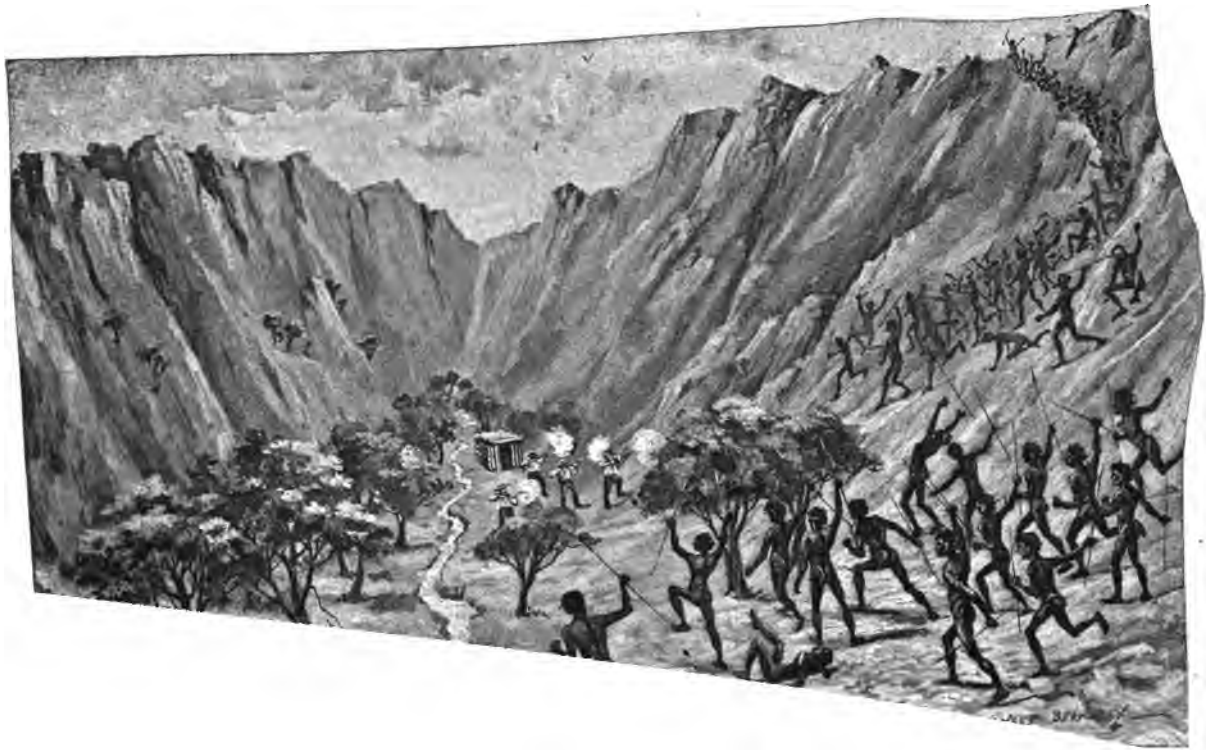
to our drought-accustomed senses; continually sounding like the murmur in the sea-shell, which, as the poets say, remembering its ancient and august abode, still murmurs as it murmured then. The water fell from a height of 150 feet; the descent was not quite unbroken. A delightful shower of spray fell for many yards outside the basin, inviting to a bath, which we exquisitely enjoyed; the basin was not more than six feet deep. I am quite delighted with this new feature. There were gorges to the right of us, gorges to the left of us, and there was a gorge all round us. I shall not stay now to explore them, but will enter upon the task con amore when I bring the whole party here. I called these the Alice Falls, after one of my sisters. It was impossible to ascend the mountain viâ the cascade, so we had to flank it to reach the top. The view from thence, though inspiriting, was still most strange. Ranges upon ranges, some far and some near, bounded the horizon at all points. There was a high, bold-looking mount or range to the north-west forty or fifty miles off. Up to a certain time we always called this the North-West Mountain, as it bore in that direction when first seen, until we discovered its proper name, when I christened it Mount Destruction. Other ranges intervened much nearer. The particular portion of the range we were now on, was 1000 feet above the surrounding level. I found the boiling-point of water on this summit was 206°, being the same as upon the summit of the Sentinel—that is to say, 3085 feet above the sea. The country intervening between this and the other ranges in view, appeared open and good travelling ground. The ranges

beyond this have a brownish t
entirely different from those at F
rock formation here is a white
glomerate granite. All the r
entirely timberless, and are all mo
and corrugated, some having co
some looking like enormous egg
end; this for the first view. We
our horses, and departed for F
grained geographical feature. Or
new
recovered my glasses. The
air, the cool, there was a swe
the fertil rning was like one of
Colonies. ng, in the far-off agr
to flow. portions of the so
When we reached
om home, we found

Emu Tank all the c
the tank only holdin
atly reduced its vo
evaporate before we
of bushes and stick
Remounting, we now
hat we had avoided
ater was now all b
ined some, though
s; we set to wor
le with a tomahawk
r off the clay-pan i
ushes, and sticks
homewards. On
tank, we found

water was nearly all gone, and our original tank not large enough, so we chopped out another and drained all the surplus water into it. Then the boughs and bushes and sticks for a roof must be got, and by the time this was finished we were pretty well sick of tank making. Our hands were blistered, our arms were stiff, and our whole bodies bathed in streams of perspiration, though it was a comparatively cool day. We reached home very late on the 13th, having left the range on the 10th. I was glad to hear that the natives had not troubled the camp in my absence. Another circumstance gratified us also, and that was, Gibson had shot a large wallaby; we had not tasted meat since we left on the 7th.

To-day, 14th, we were getting all our packs and things ready for a start into the new and northern regions, when at eleven A.M. Mr. Tietkens gave the alarm that all the rocks overhead were lined with natives, who began to utter the most direful yells so soon as they found themselves discovered. Their numbers were much larger than before, and they were in communication with others in the tea-tree on the opposite side of the creek, whose loud and inharmonious cries made even the heavens to echo with their sounds. They began operations by poising their spears and waving us away. We waited for some little time, watching their movements, with our rifles in our hands. A flight of spears came crashing through the flimsy sides of our house, the roof and west gable being the only parts thickly covered, and they could see us jumping about inside to avoid their spears. Then a flight of spears came from the concealed



y in the tea-tree. Mr. Tietkens an
red right into the middle of the
ocks behind which they hid, the
of spears; how we escaped
ne. In the meantime Gibs
firing through the boughs, and
s for us to take the aggressiv
e rocks after the enemy, when
like caterpillars, as instantane
own underneath us right at the
d they would set fire to it; we
e them from our stronghold, in
mp more or less the worse, an
a considerable quantity of
e shape of spears, womm
bies' skins, owls, fly-flappers,
erous other minor valuable
ght in triumph to the camp.
ed me to have to fire at the
s only when our lives were in
er that we did so, for, as Ia
e trade of war I have slain me
ery stuff o' the conscience to
der. I lack iniquity, someti
ice. We then went on with o
cting our foes to return, but w
sted, as they now probably t
s that would not stand too mu
hree horses were missing, th
leave that day, and when the
next, it was too late to start. I
ches up all night, so as to g
orrow. I was very uneasy a
anks, as every hour's delay w

consequence. I had no very great regret at leaving this depot, except that I had not been able to push out more than 150 miles to the west from it. I now thought by going to the new northern range, that my progress thence might be easier. We may perhaps have paid the passing tribute of a sigh at leaving our little gardens, for the seeds planted in most of them had grown remarkably well. The plants that throve best here were Indian gram, maize, peas, spinach, pumpkins, beans, and cucumbers; melons also grew pretty well, with turnips and mustard. Only two wattles out of many dozens sown here came up, and no eucalypts have appeared, although the seeds of many different kinds were set. Gibson had been most indefatigable in keeping the little gardens in order, and I believe was really grieved to leave them, but the inexorable mandates of circumstance and duty forced us from our pleasant places, to wander into ampler realms and spaces, where no foot has left its traces. Departing, still we left behind us some lasting memorials of our visit to this peculiar place, which though a city of refuge to us, was yet a dangerous and a dreadful home. The water supply was now better than when we arrived.

> "Our fount disappearing,
> From the rain-drop did borrow,
> To me comes great cheering,
> I leave it to-morrow."

There were a number of opossums here which often damaged the garden produce in the night. There were various dull-plumaged small birds, with hawks, crows, and occasionally ducks, and one

inable croaking
y me exceedingly.
he glen I could neve
s. It might have
r flitting may be
e shattered rocks
glodytes' shore, wher
those arid regions yo
nder, time and energ
t romantic region, its
memory oft besieging
e; again I hear the
he rocks, see the walla
g at the roar, of the vo
matic detonations, whic
sh to know no more.
d at last, and at length w
certainly in the direction
o, but still to something n
ort Mueller, of course, was
nd the Baron,* who was
the fund for this expeditio
st astonishing place it has
visit. Occasionally one wou
nding clang, of some falling
glen below, toppled from i
terranean tremour or earthq
rations of the seismatic wav
rocks into different groups a
merly possessed. I had m
erstitious feelings with reg
t, for there was always a stra
spirits whilst here, arising
constant dread of attacks

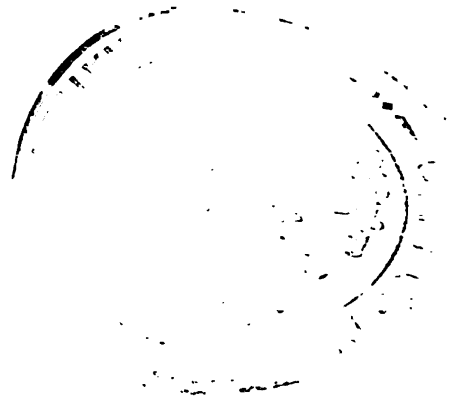
natives, and partly from the physical peculiarities of the region itself.

> "On all there hung a shadow and a fear,
> A sense of mystery, the spirit daunted,
> And said, as plain as whisper in the ear,
> This region's haunted."

On the 16th we departed, leaving to the native owners of the soil, this singular glen, where the water flowed only in the night, where the earthquake and the dry thunderstorm occurred every day, and turned our backs for the last time upon

> "Their home by horror haunted,
> Their desert land enchanted,"

and plunged again into the northern wilderness.



CHAPTER VII.

FROM 16TH JANUARY TO 19TH FEBRUARY, 1874.

The Kangaroo Tanks—Horses stampede—Water by digging—Staggering horses—Deep rock-reservoir—Glen Cumming—Mount Russell—Glen Gerald—Glen Fielder—The Alice Falls—Separated hills—Splendid-looking creek—Excellent country—The Pass of the Abencerrages—Sladen Water—An alarm—Jimmy's anxiety for a date—Mount Barlee—Mount Buttfield—"Stagning" water—Ranges continue to the west—A notch—Dry rocky basins—Horses impounded—Desolation Glen—Wretched night—Terrible Billy—A thick clump of gums—A strong and rapid stream—The Stemodia viscosa—Head first in a bog—Leuhman's Spring—Groener's and Tyndall's Springs—The Great Gorge—Fort McKellar—The Gorge of Tarns—Ants again—Swim in the tarn—View from summit of range—Altitude—Tatterdemalions—An explorer's accomplishments—Cool and shady caves—Large rocky tarn—The Circus—High red sandhills to the west—Ancient lake bed—Burrowing wallabies—The North-west Mountain—Jimmy and the grog bottle—The Rawlinson Range—Moth and fly-catching plant—An inviting mountain—Inviting valley—Fruitless search for water—Ascend the mountain—Mount Robert—Dead and dying horses—Description of the mob—Mount Destruction—Reflections—Life for water—Hot winds—Retreat to Sladen Water—Wild ducks—An ornithological lecture—Shift the camp—Cockatoo parrots—Clouds of pigeons—Dragged by Diaway—Attacked by the natives.

It was late on the 16th of January when we left Fort Mueller. We reached our first or Kangaroo Tanks in eleven miles, so called as we saw several kangaroos there on our first visit; but only having

revolvers, we could not get near enough to shoot any of them. The water had remained in them quite as well as I could expect, but we did not use it that night. The horses were evidently inclined to ramble back, so we short-hobbled them; but as soon as it became dusk, they all went off at a gallop. Mr. Tietkens and I went after them, but the wretches would not allow us to get up with them. The moment they heard us breaking any sticks in the scrubs behind them, off they started again; we had to go five or six miles before we could get hold of any of them, and it being cloudy and dark, we hardly knew which way to drive them back; at length we saw the reflection of a fire, and it proved we were taking them right; it was midnight when we got back. We tied one up and waited for morning, when we found they were all gone again, but having one to ride we thought to get them pretty soon. It now appeared that in the scrubs and darkness last night we had missed three. Now we had to use our tank water, the three missing horses not being found by night. The missing horses were found the next day, the 18th, and we continued our journey from these now empty tanks at twelve o'clock, and reached the native clay-pan tanks by night. The second one we had dug, though well shaded, was quite dry, and the native hole contained only sufficient for about half the horses. Some drank it all up, the rest going without, but we consoled them with the assurance that they should have some when we reached the top or Emu Tank. We wanted to fill up our own water-bags, as our supply was exhausted. On reaching it, however, to our disgust we found it perfectly dry, and as we couldn't

get any water, the only thing to do was to keep pushing on, as far and as fast as we could, towards the Alice Falls. We got some water by digging in a small Grevillea (beef-wood-tree), water-channel, about three miles this side of it. The horses were exceedingly thirsty, and some of them when they got water were afflicted with staggers. The grass was beautifully green. The last few days have been comparatively cool. As the horses had two heavy days' stages, I did not move the camp, but Mr. Tietkens and I rode off to the main range to explore the gorges we had formerly seen to the east. The country at the foot of the range was very stony, rough, and scrubby. We reached the mouth of the most easterly gorge, tied up our horses, and walked up. We very soon came upon a fine deep long rock-reservoir with water running into and out of it. I could not touch the bottom with over twenty feet of string. The rocky sides of this gorge rose almost perpendicularly above us, and the farther we went up, the more water we saw, until our passage was completely stopped by the abruptness of the walls and the depth of the water at their feet; I called this Glen Cumming.* The particular part or hill of the range on which this reservoir exists I named Mount Russell;* this was the most eastern mount of the range. We then turned westerly towards the Alice Falls, and in a mile and a half we came to another gorge, where there was a cascade falling into a very clear round basin over twenty feet deep, washed out of solid white stone. There were numerous other basins, above and below the large one. I called this place Glen Gerald. Proceeding on our way, we came to another

cascade and basin; the fall of water was from a lesser height. I called this Glen Fielder. From here we went to the Alice Falls, rested the horses, and had a swim and delicious shower bath. A warm wind from the south-east prevailed all day.

I wished to find a road through or over this range, but will evidently have to go farther to the west, where at seven or eight miles there are apparently two separate hummocks. We returned to camp quite charmed with our day's ramble, although the country was very rough and stony. The vegetation about here is in no way different from any which exists between this range and Mount Olga. Making a move now in the direction of the two apparently separated hills, we passed through some scrub of course, and then came to grassy gum-tree or eucalyptus flats, with water-channels. At twelve miles we came fairly on to the banks of a splendid-looking creek, with several sheets of water; its bed was broad, with many channels, the intermediate spaces being thickly set with long coarse green rushes. The flow of the water was to the north, and the creek evidently went through a glen or pass; the timber grew thick and vigorous; the water had a slightly brackish taste. All through the pass we saw several small sheets of water. One fine hole had great quantities of ducks on it, but Gibson, who started to shoot some of them, couldn't get his gun to go off, but the ducks' fire-arms acted much better, for they went off extremely well.

We encamped at a place near a recent native camp, where the grass was very good. This was

evidently a permanently watered pass, with some excellent country round it to the south.

The range appeared to continue to the west, and this seemed the only pass through it. I called this the Pass of the Abencerrages—that is to say, the Children of the Saddle. The creek and its waters I named Sladen Water, after the late Sir Charles Sladen.* This evening, having had a comfortable bath, I was getting my blankets ready for bed when Jimmy Andrews came rushing over to me. I immediately grabbed a rifle, as I thought it was an attack by the natives. He merely begged to know what day of the month it was, and requested me to mention the fact, with day and date in my journal, that—yes, Gibson was actually seen in the act of bathing. I thought Jimmy was joking, as this I could not believe without the sensible and true avouch of mine own eyes, but there was the naked form, the splashing water, and the swimming dog. It was a circumstance well worth recording, for I am sure it is the first full-bodied ablution he has indulged in since leaving Mount Olga, eighteen weeks to a day, and I am not at all sure that he bathed there. It was therefore with great pleasure that I recorded the unusual circumstance. When Jimmy left me grinning, and I had time to get over my surprise, and give mature consideration to this unusual matter, it did seem to me better, having the welfare of the whole of the members of my expedition at heart—I say, it did appear better, on the principle of the greatest good for the greatest number, that Gibson should endure the agony of an all-over wash, than that we should be attacked and perhaps killed by the natives.

The flies on this range are evidently very numerous, for their attention to our eyes is not only persistent but very annoying.

This morning I made the latitude of this pass to be 24° 58′, and longitude 127° 55′. We followed this creek; travelling along its banks, we found native huts very numerous, and for a few miles some sheets of water were seen; the bed then became too sandy; its course was about north-west. In eight or nine miles we found that sandhill and casuarina country existed, and swallowed up the unfortunate creek. The main line of ranges continued westerly, and, together with another range in front of us to the north, formed a kind of crescent. No pass appeared to exist between them. I now went to the eastern end of a range that lay to the north of us, and passing over a low ridge had a good view of the surrounding country. Ranges appeared in almost all directions; the principal ones lay to the west and north-west. One conspicuous abrupt-faced mount bore north 17° east; this I named Mount Barlee. There were others to the east-north-east, and the long sweep of the range from which we had come to the south. One hill near us looked inviting, and we found a deep rocky gorge with water in its neighbourhood. In fact there were several fine rocky basins ten and twelve feet deep, though they were very rough places to get horses to. I called the high hill Mount Buttfield. It appeared as if no rain had fallen here lately; the water in all these holes was greenish and stagnant, or stagning as Gibson and Jimmy called it. The grass, such as there was, was old, white, and dry. The country down below, north-

wards, consisted of open, sandy, level, triodia ground, dotted with a few clumps of the desert oak, giving a most pleasing appearance to the eye, but its reality is startlingly different, keeping, as it were, the word of promise to the eye, but breaking it to the hope. While the horses were being collected this morning I ascended Mount Buttfield, and found that ranges continued to the west for a considerable distance. I now decided to make for a notch or fall in the main range we had left, which now bore nearly west, as there appeared to be a creek issuing from the hills there. Travelling over casuarina sandhills and some level triodia ground, we found there was a creek with eucalypts on it, but it was quite evident that none of the late showers had fallen there. Hardly any grass was to be found, the ground being open and stony, with thorny vegetation.

In the main channel we could only find deep, rocky, dry basins, but up a small branch gorge I found three small basins with a very limited supply of water, not sufficient for my horses both now and in the morning, so we thought it better that they should do without it to-night. Above the camp there was a kind of pound, so we put all the horses up there, as it was useless to let them ramble all over the country in the night. The ants were excessively troublesome here. I could not find sufficient shade for the thermometer to-day, but kept it as cool as I could for fear of its bursting.

This glen, or rather the vegetation which had existed in it, had been recently burned by the natives, and it had in consequence a still more gloomy and dreary appearance. I called it by its proper name, that is to say, Desolation Glen.

I could get no rest last night on account of the ants, the wretches almost ate me alive, and the horses tried so often to pass by the camp that I was delighted at the reappearance of the morn. Mr. Tietkens also had to shift his camp, and drove the horses back, but ants as big as elephants, or an earthquake that would destroy the world, would never wake Gibson and Jimmy. It was difficult to get the horses to the place where the water was, and we could only manage three at a time. There was fortunately just enough water, though none to spare. One old fool of a horse must needs jump into an empty rock basin; it was deep and funnel-shaped, so that he could not stand when he got there, so he fell, and had knocked himself about terribly before we could get him out. Indeed, I never thought he could come out whole, and I was preparing to get him out in pieces when he made one last super-equine exertion, and fell up and out at the same time.

The delay in watering the horses, and extracting Terrible Billy from the basin, made it twelve o'clock before we could turn our backs upon this hideous place, hoping to find no more like it. We travelled along the stony slope of the range nearly west, and in less than two miles we crossed a small creek-channel with a thick clump of gum-trees right under the range. The tops of a second clump were also visible about half a mile off. Mr. Tietkens went to search down Desolation Creek. I directed Gibson to go on with the horses to the foot of a hill which I pointed out to him, and to remain there until I overtook him. Up the creek close to the clump of timber the whole glen was

choked with a rank vegetation, beneath which the water ran in a strong and rapid stream that issued to the upper air from the bottom of the range. In trying to cross this channel, my horse became entangled in the dense vegetation, whose roots, planted in rich and oozy soil, induced the tops of this remarkable plant to grow ten, twelve, and fifteen feet high. It had a nasty gummy, sticky feel when touched, and emitted a strong, coarse odour of peppermint. The botanical name of this plant is Stemodia viscosa. This vegetation was not substantial enough to sustain my horse, and he plunged so violently that he precipitated me head first into the oozy, black, boggy mass, and it appeared as though he must be swallowed up alive. I had in such a place great difficulty in getting my saddle, rifle, revolver, and other gear off the animal's back. I gave up all hopes of recovering the horse, for he had ceased struggling, and was settling down bodily in the morass.

I left him and ran shouting after Gibson and Jimmy, but they were too far away; Mr. Tietkens, however, on his way after them, heard me and rode up. His astonishment was great indeed when I showed him the horse, now deeply imbedded in the bog. The vegetation could hold us up above the running stream, and at last, but how I never could make out, by dint of flogging, helping to lift, and yelling at him, the creature, when he found we were trying to help him, interested himself once more in the matter, and at length we got him out of this bottomless pit. He was white when he went in, but coal black when he came out. There were no rock-holes at the head of this spring; the water

drains from underneath the mountains, and is permanent beyond a doubt. I called this Luehman's Springs. The water appears on the surface for a little over a mile. Having re-saddled my dirty black beast, we went to the next gorge, where the clump of eucalyptus was very thick and fine-looking; the water here springing from the hills as at the last, we were mighty skeery how we approached this. A fine stream of water ran here.

After this we found five other glens with running springs, in about as many miles; they were named respectively, but afterwards, Groener's and Tyndall's Springs, the Great Gorge, Fort McKellar,* where I subsequently had a depot, and the Gorge of Tarns. Fort McKellar is the most western water suitable for a depot, and is the most agreeable encampment. Many of these glens had fine rock-holes as well as running springs; most of the channels were full of bulrushes and the peculiar Stemodia. This plant is of a dark-green colour, of a pulpy nature, with a thick leaf, and bears a minute violet-coloured flower. It seemed very singular that all these waters should exist close to the place I called Desolation Glen; it appeared as if it must be the only spot on the range that was destitute of water. After some time spent in exploring these charming places, it was time to look about for the horses, and though Gibson had crossed all these channels within sight of their waters, he never stopped for a moment to see if the horses would drink. We expected to overtake him in a mile or two, as the hill pointed out to him was now close at hand. The country was so solid and stony that we

could not follow the tracks of
distance, they could only be pi
there, but the country being ope
falling into gullies and ridges,
them at any moment, so that,
many waters and the day was S
camp early and rest. Gibs
driving on, driving on, goin
direction—north, north-north-we
west, north again; and having
us, it was just night when w
driving on up a dry creek, g
into the range amongst rocks
was gre[illegible]ly annoyed, for, havi
permanent waters, we had to
of water either for ourselve
animals being driven about
they m[illegible]ht have had a fine
grass a[illegible] splendid water. I
sense in some people's hea
I had o sense in coming
myself.

A fe[illegible]ce, warm south wi
ants we[illegible] dreadful, and wou
for a mi[illegible]ute, though the oth
them. [illegible]he range still co
other c[illegible]eks were visible
decided o return to the las
is to sa[illegible] at the Gorge of T
sleep, I [illegible]vent after the hors
and fou[illegible]d they had wand
although [illegible] short-hobbled.
cause, f[illegible] one horse had
his pack [illegible]on, and had cons

fine jaunt. When all were found and packed, we returned to the gorge which, in consequence of its having so many splendid basins of deep water, I named as before said. On arriving, we fixed our camp close up to the large basins, but the horses could water a mile below, where some tea-tree grew, and where the water reappeared upon the surface after sinking beneath it. There was some good feed here for the horses, but it was over a very limited area.

We had a swim in the fine rocky tarn, and we were delighted to be joined by Gibson in our ablutions. Could the bottom of this pool be cleared of the loose blocks of stone, gravel, and sand, it would doubtless be found of very great depth; but the rains and floods of ages have nearly filled it with stones, loosened from the upper rocks, and it is only in the crevices between the rocks at the bottom that one can discover the depth to be greater than seven feet. Shade here is very scarce when the sun is overhead, except up around the large basin, where there are caves and overhanging rocky ledges, under which we sit, and over which the splashing waters from their sources above fall into the tarn below.

The view from the top of the range was very similar to that from Mount Buttfield, only that now to the south we could see an horizon of scrub. To the north, the natives were burning the spinifex, and this produced such a haze that no definite view could be obtained. Other portions of the range quite prevented a western view. The altitude of this summit was a little over 3000 feet above sea level.

Not being able to glean any farther information about the surrounding country, we (con)descended to work in the shady caves, swimming and working alternately during the day, for we had plenty of the ever-recurring tasks to do, viz. the repairing of pack-bags and clothes, and the unravelling of canvas for twine.

The first night we passed here was close and hot. We had so much of sewing to do that we set to work with a will; our clothes also require as much attention as the pack-bags and pack-saddles. No one could conceive the amount of tearing and patching that is for ever going on; could either a friend or stranger see us in our present garb, our appearance would scarcely be thought even picturesque; for a more patched and ragged set of tatterdemalions it would be difficult to find upon the face of the earth. We are not, indeed, actually destitute of clothes, but, saving our best for future emergencies, we keep continually patching our worst garments, hence our peculiar appearance, as our hats, shirts, and trousers, are here and there, so quilted with bits of old cloth, canvas, calico, basil, greenhide, and old blanket, that the original garment is scarcely anywhere visible. In the matter of boots the traveller must be able to shoe himself as well as his horses in these wild regions of the west. The explorer indeed should be possessed of a good few accomplishments—amongst these I may enumerate that he should be able to make a pie, shoe himself or his horse, jerk a doggerel verse or two, not for himself, but simply for the benefit or annoyance of others, and not necessarily for publication, nor as a guarantee of good faith; he must be able to take,

and make, an observation now and again, mend a watch, kill or cure a horse as the times may require, make a pack-saddle, and understand something of astronomy, surveying, geography, geology, and mineralogy, et hoc, simile huic.

With regard to shoeing oneself, I will give my reader some idea of what strength is required for boots in this country. I repaired mine at Fort Mueller with a double sole of thick leather, with sixty horseshoe nails to each boot, all beautifully clenched within, giving them a soft and Turkish carpet-like feeling to the feet inside; then, with an elegant corona of nail-heads round the heel and plates at the toes, they are perfect dreadnoughts, and with such understandings I can tread upon a mountain with something like firmness, but they were nearly the death of me afterwards for all that.

In the shade of our caves here the thermometer does not rise very high, but in the external glen, where we sleep in the open air, it is no cooler.

On the 29th we left this cool and shady spot—cool and shady, however, only amongst the caves—and continued our march still westward, along the slopes of the range.

In eight miles we crossed ten creeks issuing from glens or gorges in the range; all that I inspected had rocky basins, with more or less water in them. Other creeks were seen ahead, but no view could be got of any horizon to the west; only the northern and eastern ones being open to our view. The country surrounding the range to the north appeared to consist of open red sandhills, with casuarina in the hollows between. At sixteen miles I found a large rocky tarn in a creek-gorge; but

e or no grass for th
ntry at the foot of th
modity, except at
ellent.
ince we left Sladen
e well, and the slop
gh and stony, many
e-footedness. I cann
tinue farther than an
ugh I cannot see its en
Many delays by visiting
y late when we sat do
dia to devour our fru
le was the monarch of th
on the highest peak of a
thery sky-line when lookin
re sat the solemn, solita
Lorelei on her rock—ab
though he had a mission
ssing events, and to record
e and fate. There was a
sin still farther up the gor
rcus, but this creek and our
nt by the name of the Cir
e next day I could see th
nge. In nine miles we cross
cended a hill north of us, a
stern view. It consisted enti
ls with casuarinas and low
e horizon at about ten miles.
d brought us so far to the
had fallen off slightly in
stern extremity, and a deep
l country, covered with de

rounded it on all sides. Nearer to us, north-westerly, and stretching nearly to west, lay the dry, irregular, and broken expanse of an ancient lake bed. On riding over to it we found it very undefined, as patches of sandhills occurred amongst low ridges of limestone, with bushes and a few low trees all over the expanse. There were patches of dry, soda-like particles, and the soil generally was a loose dust-coloured earth. Samphire bushes also grew in patches upon it, and some patches of our arch-enemy, triodia. Great numbers of wallaby, a different kind from the rock, were seen amongst the limestone rises; they had completely honeycombed all we inspected. Water there was none, and if Noah's deluge visited this place it could be conveniently stowed away, and put out of sight in a quarter of an hour.

Returning to the horses, we turned southerly to the most westerly creek that issues from the range. I found some water up at the head of it in rock-holes; but it was so far up easterly, that we could not have been more than five or six mi[illegible]es across the hills from our last night's encampment at the Circus. There was only a poor supply of w[illegible]ter in two small holes, which could not last longer [illegible]han three days at the most. The thermometer ra[illegible]ged up to 104° to-day. Some of the horses are [illegible]now terribly footsore. I would shoe them, only tha[illegible] we are likely to be in the sandhills again immedia[illegible]tely. I did not exactly know which way to go. Mr. Tietkens and I ascended the highest hill in this part of the range. I had yesterday seen something like the top of a ridge south-westerly; I now found it was part of a low distant range, and not of a very

mising nature. Th
, which now bore
ay, and I fancied I sa
ges floating in the n
untain just mentione
ch might lead me aw
sent time we had al
nce of its bearing wh
st Mountain. I thou
ght be met with soon
sterly direction than in
, as the sources of the
t somewhere in the form
ling-point of water her
llition occurred at two de
ce Falls, the western en
o feet, the middle
ch lower than the middle
l a couple of bottles of sp
partment, and as nobody se
opened one here. Jimmy
ailor boy, I am afraid had le
s very fond of grog. Whe
tle at Christmas, and Jimmy
d, "What's the use of only
uldn't give a d——," dump,
or grog unless I could get dru
w, my impression is that it wo
g to do that." He said, "
tles off and never know it."
t bottle we open you shall h
s you can take in one drink
e whole bottle." He replied
ve a nobbler for you, you kn

I'd like to give Tietkens a taste; but that [adjective] Gibson, I'll swear he won't git none." So we opened the bottle, and I said, "Now then, Jimmy, here's your grog, let's see how much you can drink." "Oh!" said he, "I ain't going to drink it all at once." "All right," I said, "if you don't, we shall—so now is your chance." Jimmy poured out a good stiff glass and persisted in swallowing it raw. In five minutes he was fast asleep, and that was all he got out of the bottle; he never woke till morning, and then—well, the bottle was empty then.

My readers will form a better idea of this peculiar and distant mountain range when I tell them that it is more than sixty miles long, averaging five or six miles through. It is of a bold and rounded form; there is nothing pointed or jagged in its appearance anywhere, except where the eagle sat upon the rock at the Circus; its formation is mostly a white conglomerate, something between granite, marble, and quartz, though some portions are red. It is surrounded, except to the east, by deserts, and may be called the monarch of those regions where the unvisited mountains stand. It possesses countless rocky glens and gorges, creeks and valleys, nearly all containing reservoirs of the purest water. When the Australian summer sunset smooths the roughness of the corrugated range, like a vast and crumpled garment, spread by the great Creator's hand, east and west before me stretching, these eternal mountains stand. It is a singular feature in a strange land, and God knows by what beady drops of toilsome sweat Tietkens and I rescued it from its former and ancient oblivion. Its position in latitude is between the

24th and 25th parallels, and its longitude between 127° 30′ and 128° 30′. I named it the Rawlinson Range, after Sir Henry Rawlinson, President of the Royal Geographical Society of London. I found a singular moth, and fly-catching, plant in this range; it exudes a gummy substance, by which insects become attached to the leaves. The appearance of this range from a distance is white, flat, corrugated, rounded, and treeless. It rises between 1100 and 1200 feet in its highest portions, about the centre, in the neighbourhood of Fort McKellar, above the surrounding country, though its greatest elevation above the sea is over 3000 feet.

On the 1st of February, after a very hot night, we made a late start for the North-west Mountain, which now bore nearly north-east. It took some miles to get clear of the stones of the range, the appearance of the new feature we were steering for being most inviting. Its corrugated front proclaimed the existence of ravines and gorges, while a more open valley ran between it and some lower hills immediately to the west of it.

The horses were so delighted to get off the stones, that they travelled uncommonly fast, and we got over twenty-eight miles by night, though the country was exceedingly heavy travelling, being all high, red sandhills, and until near the end of our day's stage we could scarcely ever see the mountain at all. We encamped without water, but I expected to get some early next day at the mountain. Two of the horses lay down at the camp all night, being thirsty, tired, and footsore; there was no grass for them. The thermometer to-day indicated 108° in the shade. A great number of

the horses, from being footsore, were lying down this morning, and when mustered they all looked excessively hollow and thirsty. If no water be found at this mountain, how many of them will be alive in a couple of days? Yesterday we made twenty-eight, and to-day at twenty-three, miles we reached the foot of the mount. There was an inviting valley, up which we took the horses a mile. Then, leaving Gibson and Jimmy to await our return, Mr. Tietkens and I rode away in search of water. It was evident that only a trifling shower, if any, had visited this range, for not a drop of water could be found, nor any rock reservoirs where it might lodge. We parted company, and searched separately, but when we met again we could only report to each other our non-success. It was now past two o'clock, our horses had been ridden somewhat fast over the most horrible and desolate stony places, where no water is, and they were now in a very exhausted state, especially Mr. Tietkens's.

There were yet one or two ravines in the southern face of the range, and while I ascended the mountain, Mr. Tietkens and the others took the horses round that way and searched. From the summit of this sterile mount I had expected at least a favourable view, but to my intense disappointment nothing of the kind was to be seen. Two little hills only, bearing 20° and 14° west of north, were the sole objects higher than the general horizon; the latter was formed entirely of high, red sand-hills, with casuarina between. To the east only was a peaked and jagged range, which I called Mount Robert, after my brother; all the rest was a bed of undulating red sand. What was to be

hoped from a region such as this? Could water exist in it? It was scarcely possible. For an independent watercourse I could not hope, because in the many hundreds of miles westward from the telegraph line which we had travelled, no creek had been met, except in the immediate vicinity of ranges, and not a drop of water, so to speak, had I obtained away from these. I was upon the point of naming this Mount Disappointment, it looked so inviting from a distance, and yet I could find no water; and if none here, what possibility could there be of getting any in the midst of the dense bed of sandhills beyond? I did not test the boiling-point of water, for I had none to boil, but the elevation was about 1100 feet above the surrounding country. From a distance this mount has a very cheering and imposing appearance, and I would have gone to it from almost any distance, with a full belief in its having water about it. But if, indeed, the inland mountain has really voice and sound, what I could gather from the sighings of the light zephyrs that fanned my heated brow, as I stood gazing hopelessly from this summit, was anything but a friendly greeting, it was rather a warning that called me away; and I fancied I could hear a voice repeating, Let the rash wand'rer here beware; Heaven makes not travellers its peculiar care.

Descending now, I joined the others at the foot of the hill, when Mr. Tietkens and Gibson informed me they had searched everywhere, but in vain. The horses were huddled together in the shade of a thicket, three or four of them lying down with their packs on, and all looking the pictures of wretchedness and woe. It was now past four

o'clock, and there was no alternative but to retreat.

The Gorge of Tarns, thirty miles away, about south-south-west, was the nearest water, but between us and it was another low range with a kind of saddle or break in the middle. I wished, if possible, to get over this before night, so we turned the horses' heads in that direction. One fine horse called Diamond seemed suffering more than the rest. Mr. Tietkens's riding-horse, a small blue roan, a very game little animal that had always carried him well, albeit not too well treated, was also very bad, and two others were very troublesome to drive along. The saddle in the low range was a most difficult and stony pass; so dreadfully rough and scrubby was it, I was afraid that night would descend upon us before we could reach the southern side. Mr. Tietkens's Bluey gave in here, and fell heavily down a stony slope into a dense thicket of scrub; we had the greatest difficult in getting him out, and it was only by rolling him over the stones and down the remainder of the slope, for he could not stand, that we got him to the bottom. He was severely cut and bruised in the descent. We just managed to get clear of the stones by dark, and unpacked the exhausted animals, which had been travelling almost ever since daylight. We had no water except a mouthful for the little dog. The thermometer stood at 108°, ourselves and our horses were choking for water.

In the morning several of the horses were lying dying about the camp; Bluey, Diamond, a little cob—mate or brother of the one killed on Elder's

Creek—and one or two more, while those that were able had wandered away. Though we were up and after them at three in the morning, it was ten before I could despatch Mr. Tietkens and Jimmy with the main mob. Poor little Bluey died soon after sunrise. Gibson was after the absent horses, which he brought at length, and we packed up and went after the others. Gibson's usual riding-horse, Trew, was very bad, and quite unable to carry him. Mr. Tietkens was now riding an old horse which I had purchased in Victoria, and had owned for some time; he was called Widge. I had him out on my former expedition. He was a cool, calculating villain, that no ordinary work could kill, and he was as lively as a cricket when Mr. Tietkens rode him away; he usually carried a pack. Jimmy carried the little dog Cocky, now nearly dead from thirst and heat, though we had given him the last drop of water we possessed. Dogs, birds, and large beasts in Australia often die of heat, within sight of water. Jimmy was mounted on a gray-hipped horse, which was also out on my former trip; he carried his rider well to the end. Gibson I had mounted on a young bay mare, a creature as good as they make them; she was as merry and gay, as it is possible for any of her sex, even of the human kind, to be. Her proper name was the Fair Maid of Perth; but somehow, from her lively, troublesome, and wanton vagaries, they called her the Sow-Cow. My own riding-horse, a small, sleek, cunning little bay, a fine hack with excellent paces, called W. A., I also had out previously. He would pull on his bridle all day long to eat, he would even pretend to eat spinifex; he was now very bad and

footsore. Gibson and I overtook Mr. Tietkens and Jimmy, and we pushed on as fast as we could, the distance we had now to go, not being more than ten or eleven miles. The sandhills were exceedingly high and severe, but all the horses got over the last one.

We were now in full view of the range, with the Gorge of Tarns not more than five miles away. But here Diamond and another, Pratt, that I had out by myself at the stinking pit in November, fell, never to rise. We took off their packs and left them on the ground. The thermometer then stood at 106° in the shade. We pushed on, intending to return immediately with water to the relief of these unfortunates. The pack-horses now presented a demoralised and disorganised rout, travelling in a long single file, for it was quite impossible to keep the tail up with the leaders. I shall try to give my reader some slight idea of them, if description is sufficiently palpable to do so. The real leader was an old black mare, blear-eyed from fly-wounds, for ever dropping tears of salt rheum, fat, large, strong, having carried her 180 lbs. at starting, and now desperately thirsty and determined, knowing to an inch where the water was; on she went, reaching the stony slopes about two miles from the water. Next came a rather herring-gutted, lanky bay horse, which having been bought at the Peake, I called Peveril; he was generally poor, but always able, if not willing, for his work. Then came a big bay cob, and an old flea-bitten gray called Buggs, that got bogged in the Stemodia Viscosa Creek, and a nuggetty-black harness-horse called Darkie, always very fat. These last three carried 200 lbs. each at

starting. Then Banks, the best saddle-horse I have, and which I had worked too much in dry trips before reaching this range; he was very much out of sorts and footsore. Then an iron-grey colt, called Diaway, having been very poor and miserable when first purchased, but he was a splendid horse. Then came the sideways-going old crab, Terrible Billy. He was always getting into the most absurd predicaments—poor old creature; got down our throats at last!—falling into holes, and up and down slopes, going at them sideways, without the slightest confidence in himself, or apparent fear of consequences; but the old thing always did his work well enough. Blackie next, a handsome young colt with a white stripe down his face, and very fast; and Formby, a bay that had done excellent harness-work with Diamond on the road to the Peake; he was a great weight-carrier. The next was Hollow Back, who had once been a fine-paced and good jumping horse, but now only fit for packing; he was very well bred and very game. The next was Giant Despair, a perfect marvel. He was a chestnut, old, large-framed, gaunt, and bony, with screwed and lately staked feet. Life for him seemed but one unceasing round of toil, but he was made of iron; no distance and no weight was too much for him. He sauntered along after the leaders, looking not a whit the worse than when he left the last water, going neither faster nor slower than his wont. He was dreadfully destructive with his pack-bags, for he would never get out of the road for anything less than a gum-tree. Tommy and Badger, two of my former expedition horses; Tommy and Hippy I bought a second time from Carmichael, when

coming up to the Peake. Tommy was poor, old, and footsore, the most wonderful horse for his size in harness I ever saw. Badger, his mate, was a big ambling cob, able to carry a ton, but the greatest slug of a horse I ever came across; he seems absolutely to require flogging as a tonic; he must be flogged out of camp, and flogged into it again, mile after mile, day after day, from water and to it. He was now, as usual, at the tail of the straggling mob, except Gibson's former riding-horse called Trew. He was an excellent little horse, but now so terribly footsore he could scarcely drag himself along; he was one of six best of the lot. If I put them in their order I should say, Banks, the Fair Maid of Perth, Trew, Guts (W. A.), Diaway, Blackie and Darkie, Widge, the big cob Buggs—the flea-bitten grey—Bluey, Badger, who was a fine ambling saddle-horse, and Tommy; the rest might range anyhow. The last horse of all was the poor little shadow of a cob, the harness-mate of the one killed at Elder's Creek. On reaching the stones this poor little ghost fell, never again to rise. We could give him no relief, we had to push on. Guts gave in on the stones; I let him go and walked to the water. I need scarcely say how thirsty we all were. On reaching the water, and wasting no time, Mr. Tietkens and I returned to the three fallen horses, taking with us a supply of water, and using the Fair Maid, Widge, Formby, and Darkie; we went as fast as the horses could go. On reaching the little cob we found him stark and stiff, his hide all shrivelled and wrinkled, mouth wide open, and lips drawn back to an extraordinary extent. Pushing on we arrived where Diamond and Pratt had

fallen. They also were quite dead, and must have died immediately after they fell; they presented the same appearance as the little cob. Thus my visit to the North-west Mountain had cost the lives of four horses, Bluey, Diamond, Pratt, and the cob. The distance they had to travel was not great—less than ninety miles—and they were only two nights without water; but the heat was intense, the country frightful, and to get over the distance as soon as possible, we may have travelled rather fast. The horses had not been well off for either grass or water at starting, and they were mostly footsore; but in the best of cases, and under the most favourable start from a water, the ephemeral thread of a horse's life may be snapped in a moment, in the height of an Australian summer, in such a region as this, where that detestable vegetation, the triodia, and high and rolling sandhills exist for such enormous distances. The very sight of the country, in all its hideous terrors clad, is sufficient to daunt a man and kill a horse. I called the vile mountain which had caused me this disaster, Mount Destruction, for a visit to it had destroyed alike my horses and my hopes. I named the range of which it is the highest point, Carnarvon Range.

We returned again to the Gorge of Tarns, as Mr. Tietkens very tritely remarked, sadder but wiser men. Our position here is by no means enviable, for although there is plenty of permanent water in this range, it appears to be surrounded by such extensive deserts that advance or retreat is equally difficult, as now I had no water in tanks or otherwise between this and Fort Mueller, and not a horse might ever reach that goal. I am again

seated under the splashing fountain that falls from the rocks above, sheltered by the sunless caverns of this Gorge of Tears, with a limpid liquid basin of the purest water at my feet, sheltered from the heated atmosphere which almost melts the rocks and sand of the country surrounding us—sitting as I may well declare in the shadow of a great rock in a weary land, but we cannot shut out from the mind the perils we have endured, the perils we may yet have to endure. For the present our wants and those of our gallant horses are supplied. But to the traveller in such a wilderness, when he once turns his back upon a water, the ever-recurring question presents itself, of when and where shall I obtain more? The explorer is necessarily insatiable for water; no quantity can satisfy him, for he requires it always and in every place. Life for water he will at any moment give, for water cannot be done without. Thermometer in outer shade 106°; in the caverns 98°.

We shall have to remain here for a few days. The bare rocks in this glen and the walls of stone that form it become so heated during the day that the nights passed in it are most oppressive. The rocks have not time to cool before the sun is upon them again, and at evening, when descending from the caves, we find the thermometer actually rises in the night air. In the caves during to-day it was 98°, and at eight o'clock at night outside it was 101°. We are pestered here terribly by flies, but not plagued by either ants or mosquitoes. This evening Gibson and Jimmy shot three wallabies. This range swarms also with pigeons in every gorge and glen, and they come in clouds at night an

morning for water. Unfortu
sporting ammunition is gone,
supply of defensive. To-day
the caves was only 88°, while
104°, the cause being hot w
east. While here we shod th
of our horses. There was a
and lightning. The daytime
oppressive than the night.
appear over the eastern h
o'clock, and it passes behind
about 4.15 P.M. The horse
here, the ground being too st
herbage too poor; therefore
ment of the Abencerrages an
still v of Sladen Water. O
from ry bad, and had to b
I sent unt of water, but o
mob. or him the next da
was a Ve got back on the
sports ne lot of ducks whe
usual en Gibson and Jimm
shot, ithout getting one,
losing hich has now becom
The nd making the duck
severa rds were so frighte
at the mobs, and only one
some pass. I wanted to
got a rouble to do so.
ducks orse, and riding him
momer uietly down to the
horse, t they arrived, I
away Gibson and Jimmy
them again, althou

never hit any of them; and just as I arrived I heard the report and saw all the ducks come flying overhead up the pass. They went up therefore through the regions of the air singing sweetly as they went, but I did not sing so sweetly on the occasion. Then ensued quite a scientific little ornithological lecture on my part, referring mostly to the order of ducks, and the species known as wild ones more particularly, and I explained the subject to them in such a plain and forcible manner that both of them admitted they quite understood what I was talking about, which is a great matter for lecturers to consider, because if, after a forcible harangue, a speaker's audience is in any way mystified, or not in touch with him as to the meaning of his remarks, why, then, his time and labour are both lost; therefore I purposely refrained from any ambiguity, and delivered my figures of speech and rounded periods in words suitable for the most ordinary comprehension, and I really think it had a good effect on both of them. Of course I addressed them more in sorrow than in anger, although the loss of eight ducks was a frightfully heavy one to all of us; but I was partially consoled with the thought that they would have to bear their share of the loss. A few hours afterwards I went after the ducks again, and by good fortune bagged six in one shot; one got away in the bushes, and the other flew away; and he seemed to me to have a very crooked flew at that. These were the fattest birds I ever ate. We had a fine supper of ducks, their flavour being sup(p)er-excellent.

The ants were terribly troublesome at this waterhole, although we slept on the damp sand; so we

DRAGGED BY DIAWAY. [Page 295, Vol. I.

hifted the camp u
elected as open a
intended the cam
wo. More thunder
nd a few drops c
There were countless
parrots here; they a
Gibson or Jimmy lets
wo are sure to fall; i
before another shot ca
hey are migrating. T
to water. I intend t
mentioned as lying to th
end of this range. We
Diaway, and old Buggs,
of February, 1874, was
eventful day in my life,
termination of it. I wa
just shod; he is seldom
hack, as he is such a sp
pack-horse; he is rather
goes wrong with his pack,
ground) almost instantane
the horses up to the cam
the mob, and galloped a
was a bank of stones abou
was hidden by a growth
bounding over the great
of the channel, and reac
seeing it, until too late, whe
but fell on the top of, it, r
the same time. He scram
broad of my back.
wonderful boots before de

horseshoe nails in each, and it was no wonder that one of my feet got caught in the stirrup on the off side of the horse. It is one of the most horrible positions that the mind can well imagine, to contemplate being dragged by a horse. I have been dragged before now, and only escaped by miracles on each occasion. In this case, Diaway, finding me attached to him, commenced to lash out his newly-shod heels at me, bounding away at the same time into a dense thicket of scrub close by. Mr. Tietkens and the others seeing the accident came running up behind, as Diaway and I were departing. Fortunately I was not dragged far, but was literally kicked free from and by, the frightened and uncontrolled animal. The continual kickings I received—some on my legs and body, but mostly upon that portion of the frame which it is considered equally indecorous to present either to a friend or an enemy—at length bent one or two of the nail-heads which held me, and, tearing the upper leather off my boot, which fortunately was old, ripped it off, leaving me at length free. As I lay on my excoriated back, with saw Diaway depart without me into the scrub, the feelings of the most profound delight, although my transports were considerably lessened by the agonising sensations I experienced. Mr. Tietkens helped me to hobble over to the camp in a most disorganised state, though thanking Providence for so fortunate an escape. Had Diaway but entered the scrub not two yards from where I was released, I could not have existed more than a minute. The following day Mr. Tietkens was getting everything ready to go with me to the south-west ridges, though I had great doubts of my ability to ride, when we

ATTACK AT SLADEN WATER.

[Page 297, Vol. I.

became aware of the presence of a whole host of natives immediately below the camp. All the morning the little dog had been strangely perturbed, and we knew by the natives' fires that they were in our immediate neighbourhood. There was so much long grass and tall rushes in the creek bed, that they could approach very close before we could possibly see them. So soon as they found themselves detected, as usual they set up the most horrible yells, and, running up on the open ground, sent a flight of spears at us before a rifle or a gun could be seized, and we had to jump behind a large bush, that I left standing on purpose, to escape. Our stand of arms was there, and we immediately seized them, sending the bullets flying just above their heads and at their feet. The report of the weapons and the whirring sound of the swiftly passing shots made them pause, and they began an harangue, ordering us out of their territories, to the south. Seeing us, however, motionless and silent, their courage returned, and they advanced, uttering their war cries with renewed energy. Again the spears would have been amongst us; but I, not relishing even the idea of barbed spears being stuck through my body, determined not to permit either my own or any of my party's lives to be lost for the sake of not disturbing my firearms. Consequently we at length charging the enemy succeeded in causing a rout, and driving the natives away. There were a great number of natives in the bushes, besides those who attacked us. There were not many oldish men among them, only one with grey hair. I am reminded here to mention that in none of my travels in these western wilds

have I found any places of sepulture of any kind. The graves are not consumed by the continual fires that the natives keep up in their huntings, for that would likewise be the fate of their old and deserted gunyahs, which we meet with frequently, and which are neither all nor half destroyed. Even if the natives put no boughs or sticks upon their graves, we must see some mounds or signs of burial-places, if not of bones or skulls. My opinion is, that these people eat their aged ones, and most probably those who die from natural causes also.

It was a cool, breezy day, and, in consequence of the hostile action of the natives, I did not depart on the south-west excursion. I was not sorry to delay my departure, for I was in great pain all over. I now decided to leave Mr. Tietkens and take Jimmy with me. I cannot say I anticipate making any valuable discovery on this trip; for had there been ranges of any elevation to the westward, or beyond the ridges in question, I should in all probability have seen them from the end of this range, and should have visited them in preference to Mount Destruction. I felt it incumbent on me to visit them, however, as from them I might obtain a view of some encouraging features beyond.

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM 20TH FEBRUARY TO 12TH MARCH, 1874.

Journey south-west—Glens and springs—Rough watering-place—A marble bath—Glassy rocks—Swarms of ants—Solitary tree—An oven—Terrible night—And day—Wretched appearance of the horses—Mountains of sand—Hopeless view—Speculations—In great pain—Horses in agony—Difficulty in watering them—Another night of misery—Dante's Inferno—The waters of oblivion—Return to the pass—Dinner of carrion—A smoke-house—A tour to the east—Singular pinnacle—Eastern ranges—A gum creek—Basins of water—Natives all around—Teocallis—Horrid rites—A chip of the old block—A wayside inn—Gordon's Springs.

TAKING Jimmy and three horses, we travelled, after clearing the pass, on the south slopes of the range westward, crossing several small creek-channels, which might or might not have waters in them. At twelve miles we came to a green-looking channel and found water, running so far down as a rocky hole, near where we crossed. We outspanned here for an hour, as I found riding very severe toil after my late kicking. I named this secluded but pretty little spot, Glen Helen. It was very rough travelling ground—worse than on the northern side of the range. Three miles farther, we crossed another running water, and called it Edith Hull's Springs. At ten miles farther, after crossing several channels, we turned up one, and got some water in a very rough and stony gorge off the main channel, which

was dry. There was very poor feed, but we were compelled to remain, as there was no other creek in sight for some miles, and the horses, although shod, could only travel slowly over the terribly rough ground. When we turned them out, they preferred to stand still, rather than roam about among the rocks and boulders for food. The day was cool; the southern horizon, the only one we could see, was bounded entirely by red sandhills and casuarina timber. The horses ate nothing all night, and stood almost where they were hobbled.

In this region, and in the heat of summer, the moment horses, no matter how fat and fresh they may be, are taken away from their companions to face the fearful country that they know is before them, they begin to fret and fall away visibly. They will scarcely eat, and get all the weaker in consequence, and then they require twice as much water as they otherwise would if their insides were partly filled with grass. When I released our three from the hobbles this morning, they immediately pretended to feed; but this old ruse has been experienced before, and time was now up, to move on again. They were very thirsty, and nearly emptied the rock basin, where we had a kind of bath before starting. Along the foot-hills over which we were obliged to travel, the country was much rougher than yesterday; so much so, that I kept away as much as possible. At twenty miles we turned up a creek-channel, which proved to be a dreadful gorge, being choked up with huge boulders of red and white granite. Among these I found a fine rock tarn; indeed, I might call it a marble bath, for the rock was almost pure white,

and perfectly bare all round. The water was considerably over our heads, and felt as cold as ice. It was a dreadful place to get horses up to, and two of them fell two or three times on the glassy, shelving, and slippery rocks. The old grey, Buggs, hurt himself a good deal.

Time seems to fly in these places, except when you want it to do so, and by the time the horses got down from the water the day was nearly gone. The feed for them was very little better than at our last night's camp, nor was the glen any less stony or rough. The day was 12° hotter than yesterday; the thermometer indicated 104°. The ants in this glen were frightful; they would not allow me a moment's rest anywhere. There was but one solitary eucalyptus or gum-tree, and in its scanty shade they swarmed in countless myriads. The sun poured his fiery beams full down upon us, and it was not until he departed over the cliffs to the west that we had a moment's respite; the place was a perfect oven.

I passed the time mostly in the marble bath, and then took a walk up to the top of the range and could see the hills I desired to visit; they now bore nearly south-west. So long as the sun's rays were pouring down upon their unsheltered hides, the horses would not attempt to eat, but when he departed they fed a little on the coarse vegetation. This glen, like all the others in this range, swarmed with pigeons, and we got enough for breakfast at one shot. During the hot months, I believe whites could live entirely on pigeons in this range. At the camp at Sladen Water they came to the water in clouds, their very numbers sometimes preventing

us getting a good shot, and we had been living entirely on them, for now we had no other meat. Unfortunately, our ammunition is almost exhausted, but so long as it lasts we shall have birds. When it is gone we must eat horseflesh, and should have been driven to do so before now, only for these birds. I have an old horse now fattening for the knife, and I am sorry, i.e. happy, to say, whenever I inspect him he looks better. The one I mean is the old sideways-going Terrible Billy. Poor old creature! to work so many years as he has done for man, and then to be eaten at last, seems a hard fate; but who or what can escape that inexorable shadow, death?

It may be the destiny of some of ourselves to be eaten; for I fully believe the natives of these regions look upon all living organisms as grist for their insatiable mills. As night came on, I was compelled to lie down at last, but was so bitten and annoyed by the ants, that I had to keep moving about from place to place the whole night long, while the [in]sensible Jimmy lay sleeping and snoring, though swarmed over and almost carried away by the ants, as peacefully as though he had gone to rest under the canopy of costly state, and lulled with sounds of sweetest melody. I could not help moralising, as I often stood near him, wondering at his peace and placidity, upon the differences of our mental and physical conditions: here was one human being, young and strong, certainly, sleeping away the, to me, dreary hours of night, regaining that necessary vigour for the toils of the coming day, totally oblivious of swarms of creeping insects, that not only crawled all over him, but constantly bit into

his flesh; while another, who prided himself perhaps too much upon the mental powers bestowed by God upon him, was compelled by the same insects to wander through the whole night, from rock to rock and place to place, unable to remain for more than a moment or two anywhere; and to whom sleep, under such circumstances, was an utter impossibility. Not, indeed, that the loss of sleep troubles me, for if any one could claim to be called the sleepless one, it would be I—that is to say, when engaged in these arduous explorations, and curtained by night and the stars; but, although I can do without sleep, I require a certain amount of horizontal repose, and this I could not obtain in this fearful glen. It was, therefore, with extreme pleasure that I beheld the dawn, and—

> "To the eastward where, cluster by cluster,
> Dim stars and dull planets that muster,
> Waxing wan in a world of white lustre,
> That spread far and high."

No human being could have been more pleased than I at the appearance of another day, although I was yet doomed to several hours more misery in this dreadful gorge. The pigeons shot last night were covered within and without by ants, although they had been put in a bag. The horses looked wretched, even after watering, and I saw that it was actually necessary to give them a day's rest before I ventured with them into the frightful sandhills which I could see intervened between us and the distant ridges. Truly the hours I spent in this hideous gorge were hours of torture; the sun

roasted us, for there was no shade whatever to creep into; the rocks and stones were so heated that we could neither touch, nor sit upon them, and the ants were more tormenting than ever. I almost cried aloud for the mountains to fall upon me, and the rocks to cover me. I passed several hours in the marble bath, the only place the ants could not encroach upon, though they swarmed round the edge of the water. But in the water itself were numerous little fiendish water-beetles, and these creatures bit one almost as badly as the ants. In the bath I remained until I was almost benumbed by the cold. Then the sunshine and the heat in the gorge would seem delightful for a few minutes, till I became baked with heat again. The thermometer stood at 106° in the shade of the only tree. At three P.M. the horses came up to water. I was so horrified with the place I could no longer remain, though Jimmy sat, and probably slept, in the scanty one tree's shade, and seemed to pass the time as comfortably as though he were in a fine house. In going up to the water two of the horses again fell and hurt themselves, but the old blear-eyed mare never slipped or fell. At four P.M. we mounted, and rode down the glen until we got clear of the rough hills, when we turned upon our proper course for the ridges, which, however, we could not see. In two or three miles we entered the sandhill regions once more, when it soon rose into hills. The triodia was as thick and strong as it could grow. The country was not, so to say, scrubby, there being only low bushes and scrubs on the sandhills, and casuarina trees of beautiful outline and appearance

in the hollows. When the horses got clear of the stones they began to eat everything they could snatch and bite at.

At fifteen miles from the gorge we encamped on a patch of dry grass. The horses fed pretty well for a time, until the old mare began to think it time to be off, and she soon would have led the others back to the range. She dreaded this country, and knew well by experience and instinct what agony was in store for her. Jimmy got them back and short-hobbled them. There were plenty of ants here, but nothing to be compared to the number in the gorge, and having to remove my blankets only three or four times, I had a most delightful night's rest, although, of course, I did not sleep. The horses were sulky and would not eat; therefore they looked as hollow as drums, and totally unfit to traverse the ground that was before them. However, this had to be done, or at least attempted, and we got away early. We were in the midst of the sandhills, and here they rose almost into mountains of sand. It was most fatiguing to the horses, the thermometer 104° in the shade when we rested at twenty-two miles. Nor was this the hottest time of the day. We had been plunging through the sand mountains, and had not sighted the ridges, for thirty-seven miles, till at length we found the nearest were pretty close to us. They seemed very low, and quite unlikely to produce water. Reaching the first, we ascended it, and I could see at a glance that any prospect of finding water was utterly hopeless, as these low ridges, which ran north and south, were merely a few oblique-lying layers of upheaved granite, not much higher than the sandhills which

surrounded them, and there was no place where water could lodge even during rains. Not a rise could be seen in any direction, except, of course, from where we had come. We went on west five or six miles farther to the end of these, just about sundown: and long, indeed, will that peculiar sunset rest in my recollection. The sun as usual was a huge and glaring ball of fire that with his last beams shot hot and angry glances of hate at us, in rage at our defiance of his might. It was so strange and so singular that only at this particular sunset, out of the millions which have elapsed since this terrestrial ball first floated in ether, that I, or indeed any white man, should stand upon this wretched hill, so remote from the busy haunts of my fellow men. My speculations upon the summit, if, indeed, so insignificant a mound can be said to have a summit, were as wild and as incongruous as the regions which stretched out before me. In the first place I could only conclude that no water could exist in this region, at least as far as the sand beds extend. I was now, though of course some distance to the south also, about thirty miles to the west of the most western portion of the Rawlinson Range.

From that range no object had been visible above the sandhills in any westerly direction, except these ridges I am now upon, and from these, if any other ranges or hills anywhere within a hundred miles of the Rawlinson existed, I must have sighted them. The inference to be drawn in such a case was, that in all probability this kind of country would remain unaltered for an enormous distance, possibly to the very banks of the Murchison River itself. The question very naturally arose, Could the country be

penetrated by man, with only horses at his command, particularly at such a heated time of year? Oh, would that I had camels! what are horses in such a region and such a heated temperature as this? The animals are not physically capable of enduring the terrors of this country. I was now scarcely a hundred miles from the camp, and the horses had had plenty of water up to nearly half-way, but now they looked utterly unable to return. What a strange maze of imagination the mind can wander in when recalling the names of those separated features, the only ones at present known to supply water in this latitude—that is to say, the Murchison River, and this new-found Rawlinson Range, named after two Presidents of the Royal Geographical Society of London. The late and the present, the living and the dead, physically and metaphysically also, are not these features, as the men, separated alike by the great gulf of the unknown, by a vast stretch of that undiscovered country from whose bourne no traveller returns?

The sun went down, and I returned to my youthful companion with the horses below. We were fifty-one miles from the water we had left. The horses were pictures of misery, old Buggs's legs had swelled greatly from the contusions he had received in falling on the slippery rocks. The old black mare which I rode, though a sorry hack, looked worse than I had ever seen her before, and even the youthful and light-heeled and hearted Diaway hung his head, and one could almost span him round the flanks. The miserable appearance of the animals was caused as much by want of food as want of water, for they have scarcely eaten a mouth-

ful since we left the pass; indeed, all they had seen to eat was not inviting.

We slowly left these desolate ridges behind, and at fifteen miles we camped, Jimmy and I being both hungry and thirsty. Our small supply of water only tantalised, without satisfying us whenever we took a mouthful. We now found we had nothing to eat, at least nothing cooked, and we had to sacrifice a drop of our stock of water to make a Johnny-cake. It was late by the time we had eaten our supper, and I told Jimmy he had better go to sleep if he felt inclined; I then caught and tied up the horses, which had already rambled some distance away. When I got back I found Jimmy had literally taken me at my word; for there he was fast asleep among the coals and ashes of the fire, in which we had cooked our cake. I rolled him over once or twice to prevent him catching fire, but he did not awake The night was very warm; I tried to lay down on my rug, but I was in such pain all over from my recent accident, that I could not remain still. I only waited to allow Jimmy a little sleep, or else he would have fallen off his horse, and caused more delay. I walked to, and tried to console, the horses. Sleepless and restless, I could no longer remain.

Fast asleep is Armor lying—do not touch him, do not wake him; but Armor had to be awakened. But first I saddled and put up everything on the horses. Jimmy's lips were cracked and parched, and his tongue dry and half out of his mouth; I thought the kindest way to wake him was to pour a little water into his mouth. Up he jumped in a moment, and away we went at three o'clock in the morning, steering by the stars until daylight; slowly moving

over sandhill after sandhill. Soon after sunrise we fell in with our outgoing track, and continued on, though we had great trouble to keep the horses going at all, until we reached our old encampment of the night before last, being now only fifteen miles from the water. For the last few miles the horses had gone so dreadfully slow, I thought they would give in altogether. So soon as they were unsaddled they all lay down, shivering and groaning fearfully.

To see a horse in a state of great thirst is terrible, the natural cavity opens to an extraordinary size, and the creature strains and makes the most lamentable noises. Mares are generally worse in these cases than horses. Old Buggs and the mare were nearly dead. Diaway suffered less than the others. We had yet a small quantity of water in our bag, and it was absolutely necessary to sacrifice it to the horses if we wished them ever to return. We had but three pints, which we gave to Buggs and the mare, Diaway getting none. What the others got was only just enough to moisten their tongues. Leaving this place at eleven A.M., we reached the gorge at sundown, travelling at the rate of only two miles an hour. The day was hot, 104° at eleven A.M. When we took the saddles off the horses, they fell, as they could only stand when in motion—old Buggs fell again in going up the gorge; they all fell, they were so weak, and it took nearly an hour to get them up to the bath. They were too weak to prevent themselves from slipping in, swimming and drinking at the same time; at last old Buggs touched the bottom with his heels, and stood upon his hind-legs with his fore-feet against the rock wall, and his head bent

own between, and drank thu
rink in that fashion before.
It was very late when we
amp-tree, where we let ther
he ants were as rampant
nother night in walking up
owards midnight the horses
ut would not return, preferr
g rather than risk a passag
I went right up to the to
ot an hour's peace before
horning all the horses' legs w
nd they were frightened to
had great trouble in get
t was impossible to ride th
ad to remain for another
Not Dante's, gelid lowest c
Dis, could cause more angui
within its bounds, than did
ne. Even though Moses
on Pharaoh, it is a wonder Dante never
have a region of them full of wicke
eternally tortured with their bites, and
smells. Dante certainly was good
horrors. But imagination can't concei
of a region swarming with ants; an
never lived in an ant country, and
tion what torture such creatures c
smaller they are the more terrible
consolation here was my marble
horses had polluted; within its
depths I could alone find respite fr
Oh, how earnestly did I wish t
the waters of oblivion, or that

ind nepenthe, wh
y woes, for the
nceasingly continu

"From night till

Here of course we ha
ource of pleasure a
hat was, that Jimmy
ast. On the 26th,
from this odious gorg
lessness, agony, and
imagined, though of c
glen for water, and uni
lives, we cannot give u
deal of water in this bat
horses could swim abou
Marble Bath, after my
Edith also after her on m
stone here is not actuall
it. I saw no limestone
approach to it is in the l
bed of the ancient Lake
lying to the west of the
stone here was a kind of
away as much as possible o
range, and got to Glen Hele
knocked up, and we had
him on foot, so that it was
to the glen. We got all t
pass early the next day. N
but the horses had never
Oh, didn't I sleep that nigh
ness! I hadn't slept for a w
The next day, the 28th o

mmy went to look for the mob of horses. There
s a watering-place about two miles and a half south
om here, where emus used to water, and where
he horses did likewise; there they found all the
horses. There was a very marked improvement in
their appearance, they had thriven splendidly.
There is fine green feed here, and it is a capital
place for an explorer's depot, it being such an
agreeable and pretty spot. Gibson and Jimmy went
to hunt for emus, but we had none for supper. We
got a supply of pigeons for breakfast. Each day we
more deeply lament that the end of our ammunition
is at hand. For dinner we got some hawks, crows,
and parrots. I don't know which of these in
particular disagreed with me, but I suppose the
natural antipathy of these creatures to one another,
when finding themselves somewhat crowded in my
interior, was casus belli enough to set them quar-
relling even after death and burial; all I knew
was the belli was going on in such a peculiar manner
that I had to abandon my dinner almost as soon as I
had eaten it. It is now absolutely necessary to kill
a horse for food, as our ammunition is all but gone.
Mr. Tietkens and I went to find a spot to erect a
smoke-house, which required a soft bank for a flue;
we got a place half a mile away. Thermometer
104°. Mr. Tietkens and I commenced operations
at the smoke-house, and the first thing we did was
to break the axe handle. Gibson, who thought he
was a carpenter, blacksmith, and jack-of-all-trades
by nature, without art, volunteered to make a
new one, to which no one objected. The new
handle lasted until the first sapling required was
almost cut in two, when the new handle came

in two also; so we had to return to the camp, while Gibson made another handle on a new principle. With this we worked while Gibson and Jimmy shod a couple of horses. A pair of poking brutes of horses are always away by themselves, and Mr. Tietkens and I went to look for, but could not find them. We took the shovel and filled up the emu water-hole with sand, so that the horses had to show themselves with the others at the pass at night. For two or three days we shod horses, shot pigeons, and worked at the smoke-house. I did not like the notion of killing any of the horses, and determined to make a trip eastwards, to see what the country in that direction was like. We chopped up some rifle bullets for shot, to enable Gibson and Jimmy to remain while we were away, as a retreat to Fort Mueller from here was a bitter idea to me. Before I can attempt to penetrate to the west, I must wait a change in the weather. The sky was again becoming cloudy, and I had hopes of rain at the approaching equinox.

The three horses we required for the trip we put down through the north side of the pass. On March 10th, getting our horses pretty easily, we started early. As soon as we got clear of the pass on the north side, almost immediately in front of us was another pass, lying nearly east, which we reached in five miles. I called this the Weld Pass. From hence we had a good view of the country farther east. A curved line of abrupt-faced hills traversed the northern horizon; they had a peculiar and wall-like appearance, and seemed to end at a singular-looking pinnacle thirty-four or five miles away, and lying nearly east. This abrupt-faced

range swept round in a half circle, northwards, and thence to the pinnacle. We travelled along the slopes of the Rawlinson Range, thinking we might find some more good gorges before it ended, we being now nearly opposite the Alice Falls. One or two rough and stony gullies, in which there was no water, existed; the country was very rough. I found the Rawlinson Range ended in fifteen or sixteen miles, at the Mount Russell* mentioned before. Other ranges rose up to the east; the intervening country seemed pretty well filled with scrub. We pushed on for the pinnacle in the northern line, but could not reach it by night as we were delayed en route by searching in several places for water. The day was hot, close, cloudy, and sultry. In front of us now the country became very scrubby as we approached the pinnacle, and for about three miles it was almost impenetrable. We had to stop several times and chop away limbs and boughs to get through, when we emerged on the bank of a small gum creek, and, turning up its channel, soon saw some green rushes in the bed. A little further up we saw more, brighter and greener, and amongst them a fine little pond of water. Farther up, the rocks rose in walls, and underneath them we found a splendid basin of overflowing water, which filled several smaller ones below. We could hear the sound of splashing and rushing waters, but could not see from whence those sounds proceeded. This was such an excellent place that we decided to remain for the rest of the day. The natives were all round us, burning the country, and we could hear their cries. This morning we had ridden through two fresh fires, which they lit, probably,

prevent our progress; they followed us
water. I suppose they were annoyed at
such a remarkably well-hidden place. It
singular little glen. There are seve
mounds of stones placed at even distanc
and, though the ground was originally al
places like paths have been cleared betwe
There was also a large, bare, flat rock in the
these strange heaps, which were not more t
and a half feet high. I concluded—it may
uncharitably, but then I know some of the wa
customs of these people—that these are small
of teocallis, and that on the bare rock a
mentioned the natives have performed, an
again perform, their horrid rites of human butc
and that the drippings of the pellucid fountains
the rocky basins above have been echoed
re-echoed by the dripping fountains of human
from the veins and arteries of their bound
helpless victims. Though the day was hot,
shade and the water were cool, and we co
indulge in a most luxurious bath. The larg
basin was not deep, but the water was running
and out of it, over the rocks, with considerable forc
We searched about to discover by its sound fro
whence it came, and found on the left-hand side
crevice of white quartz-like stone, where the wat
came down from the upper rocks, and ran a w
partly into the basins and partly into rushes, un
our feet. On the sloping face of the white ro
and where the water ran down, was a small in
or smooth chip exactly the size of a person's m
so that we instinctively put our lips to it, and dr
of the pure and gushing element. I firmly be

this chip out of the rock has been formed by successive generations of the native population, for ages placing their mouths to and drinking at this spot; but whether in connection with any sacrificial ceremonies or no, deponent knoweth, and sayeth not. The poet Spenser, more than three hundred years ago, must have visited this spot—at least, in imagination, for see how he describes it:—

> "And fast beside there trickled softly down,
> A gentle stream, whose murmuring waves did play
> Amongst the broken stones, and made a sowne,
> To lull him fast asleep, who by it lay:
> The weary traveller wandering that way
> Therein might often quench his thirsty heat,
> And then by it, his weary limbs display;
> (Whiles creeping slumber made him to forget
> His former pain), and wash away his toilsome sweat."

There is very poor grazing ground round this water. It is only valuable as a wayside inn, or out. I called the singular feature which points out this water to the wanderer in these western wilds, Gill's Pinnacle, after my brother-in-law, and the water, Gordon's Springs, after his son. In the middle of the night, rumblings of thunder were heard, and lightnings illuminated the glen. When we were starting on the following morning, some aborigines made their appearance, and vented their delight at our appearance here by the emission of several howls, yells, gesticulations, and indecent actions, and, to hem us in with a circle of fire, to frighten us out, or roast us to death, they set fire to the triodia all round. We rode through the flames, and away.

[Page 276, Vol. I.

London; San

INDEX.

END OF VOLUME I.

LONDON: PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED, STAMFORD STREET AND CHARING CROSS.